

APR 30 1928

PERIODICAL ROOM  
GENERAL LIBRARY  
UNIV. OF MICH.

# Michigan History Magazine

VOL. XII

APRIL, 1928

NUMBER 2

---

## THE DISMISSAL OF PRESIDENT TAPPAN, UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

—*Charles M. Perry*

## GRAND RAPIDS FURNITURE CENTENNIAL

—*Arthur S. White*

## THE AUTOMOBILE INDUSTRY IN MICHIGAN

—*Earl G. Fuller*



Published Quarterly by the  
MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION

LANSING

Entered as second-class matter February 23, 1923, at the postoffice at  
Lansing, Mich., under the Act of August 24, 1912

## MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION

A STATE DEPARTMENT OF HISTORY AND ARCHIVES  
ORGANIZED MAY 28, 1913

### MEMBERS

Fred W. Green, Governor of Michigan  
William L. Clements, B. S., Bay City, *President*  
Claude H. Van Tyne, Ph. D., Ann Arbor, *Vice President*  
Augustus C. Carton, Lansing  
Clarence M. Burton, M. A., Detroit  
William L. Jenks, M. A., Port Huron  
William F. Murphy, S. T. D., Detroit

### EXECUTIVE OFFICERS

George N. Fuller, Ph. D., *Secretary*  
Percy H. Andrus, *Ass't Secretary*  
Marie B. Ferrey, *Curator*

## MICHIGAN PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Founded in 1874; successor to the Historical Society of  
Michigan founded in 1828 by Lewis Cass and others

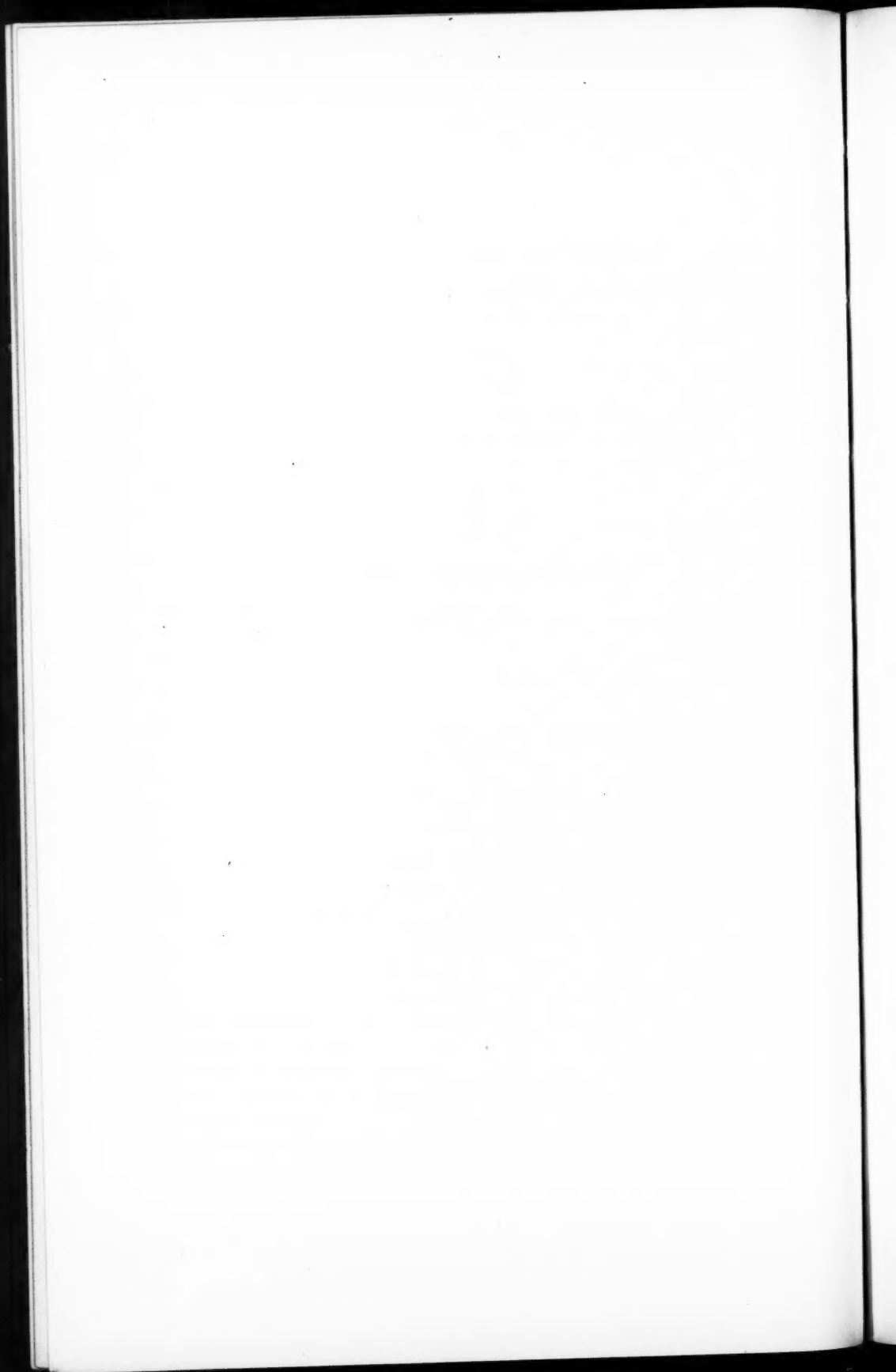
### TRUSTEES AND OFFICERS

William L. Clements, *President*  
Claude S. Larzelere, M. A., Mt. Pleasant, *Vice President*  
Lew Allen Chase, M. A., Marquette  
Chas. A. Weissert, Kalamazoo  
Carl E. Pray, M. A., Ypsilanti  
Smith Burnham, M. A., Kalamazoo  
Clarence M. Burton  
Clarence E. Bement, Lansing  
Arnold Mulder, M. A., Holland  
William L. Jenks  
Benjamin F. Davis, Lansing, *Treasurer*  
Geo. N. Fuller, *Secretary ex officio*

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

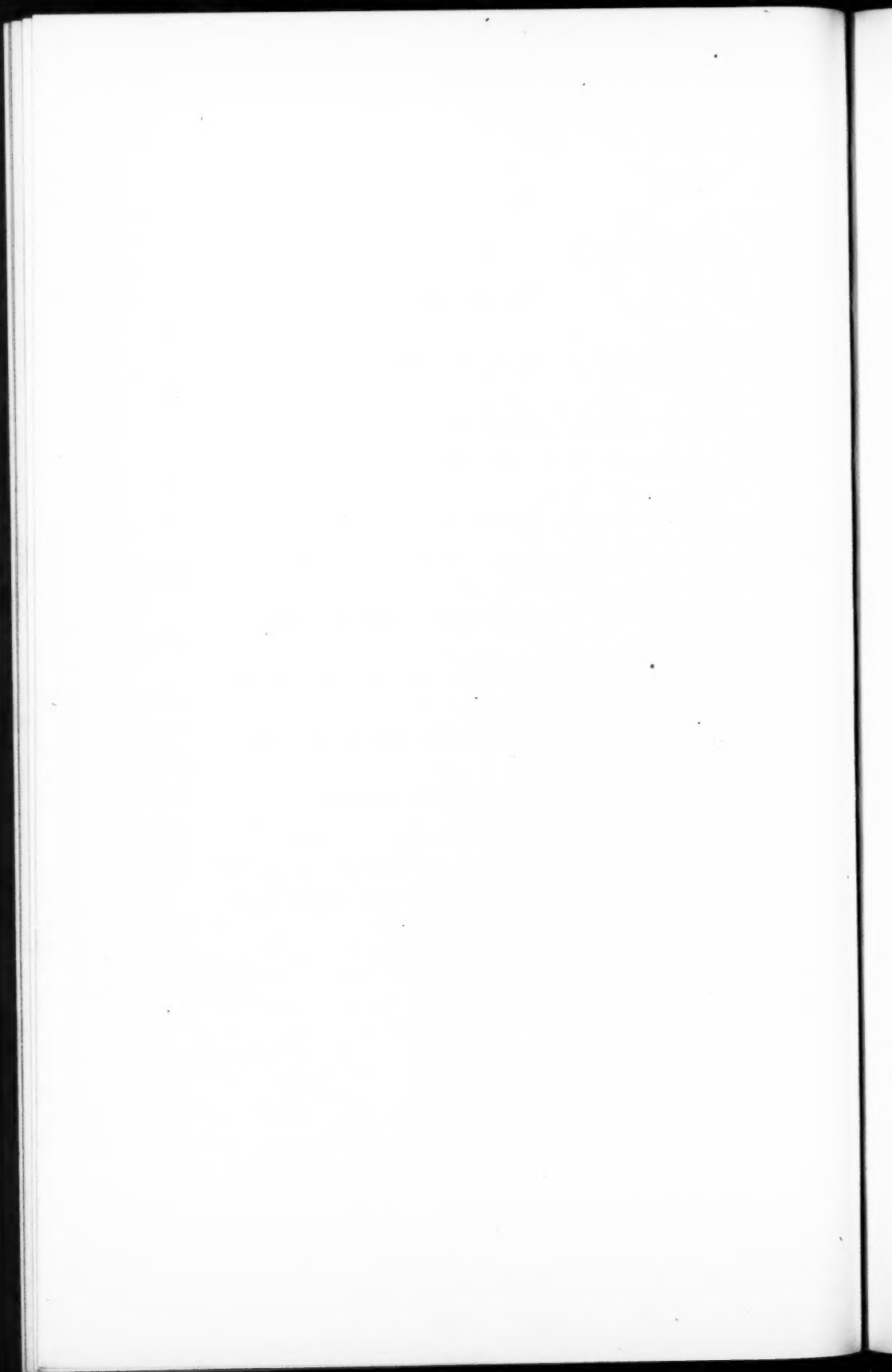
VOLUME XII, 1928, No. 2

GEORGE N. FULLER, *Editor*



## CONTENTS

	Page
THE DISMISSAL OF PRESIDENT TAPPAN—CHARLES M. PERRY .....	181
THE CLARK SCHOOL—ORLANDO W. STEPHENSON.....	202
THE BEGINNINGS (PAGEANT)—WILLIAM CHAUNCY LANGDON .....	212
AN EARLY VISITOR TO MICHIGAN—VELERA KELLER.....	252
GRAND RAPIDS FURNITURE CENTENNIAL—ARTHUR S. WHITE .....	267
THE AUTOMOBILE INDUSTRY IN MICHIGAN—EARL G. FULLER .....	280
LITTLE JOURNEYS IN JOURNALISM—WILBERT H. GUSTIN—C. S. THOMAS.....	297
HISTORY OF THE MICHIGAN STATE FEDERATION OF WOMEN'S CLUBS—IRMA T. JONES.....	302
THE FOLK OF OUR TOWN—HENRY O. SEVERANCE.....	309
VANISHED VILLAGES OF BERRIEN COUNTY—L. BENJ. REBER	322
OLD TRAILS OF CENTRAL MICHIGAN—EDMUND A. CALKINS	327
THE ARCHAEOLOGICAL COLLECTION IN THE MICHIGAN PIONEER MUSEUM—E. F. GREENMAN.....	350
HISTORICAL NOTES .....	377
AMONG THE BOOKS.....	427



# MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

---

VOL. XII

APRIL, 1928

WHOLE No. 43

---

## THE DISMISSAL OF PRESIDENT TAPPAN

BY CHARLES M. PERRY, PH.D.

(Professor of Philosophy in the University of Oklahoma)

WITH the reconciliation of March, 1861, it looked as if peace had been established between the President and the Regents. According to that arrangement, it will be remembered, the President was to be on the executive committee of the Board and the other committees were to be constituted in a way satisfactory to both sides. The overshadowing importance of the Civil War tended undoubtedly to take men's attention from the University issue. But it was too much to hope that such antagonistic interests as those of President Tappan and the Regents could be so suddenly reconciled. One writer states at a later date that after being compelled by fear of legislative action to relinquish some of their control, the Regents managed to get it back again.<sup>1</sup> Tappan tells how, after permitting him to be chairman of the executive committee according to the compromise, they avoided the arrangement by referring all executive functions to special committees. He asserts that the executive committee never met after its reorganization in 1861.<sup>2</sup> It is therefore not to be wondered at that the conflict should break out again with tragic results.

The *Detroit Advertiser and Tribune* in an editorial article published in 1864 describes the behavior of the Regents in the

---

This article concludes the series, which began with the January issue, 1926.

<sup>1</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, Jan. 20, 1864.

<sup>2</sup>Tappan, *Review by Rev. Dr. H. P. Tappan of His Connection With the University of Michigan*, 43.

following terms: "We feel fully authorized, by the facts before us, to say that these Regents have for several years, in a great measure, ignored the Faculty, and especially the President, in their kind of management; that they have modified the course of instruction, shifted a Professor from one professorship to another, elected professors, expended large sums of money for books for the library, etc., etc., without consulting the Faculty—not even the President—and not notifying the professor thus transferred of what they were about to do until after it had in effect been determined, and more, that they have been in the habit of holding informal meetings, in secret, away from the President, in which they matured their schemes, took a vote on them to ascertain how the majority stood, and if found favorable then they would go through the forms necessary to make their foregone decisions; . . . . ."

The article then proceeds to discuss the general fact of the absorption of executive functions by the Board.<sup>3</sup> Whether these charges were true to the same extent after 1861 as before may be open to question, but the final outcome argues that there was a continuation of the same attitude.

During the spring months of 1863 rumblings were heard of the coming election of Regents. The Agricultural College, Homeopathy, the proper representation of the denominations on the Board of Regents, were publicly discussed. A "Fusion ticket" was attempted. There is reason to believe that Dr. Tappan went into Politics to some extent in the spring of 1863 to determine the completion of the next Board of Regents.<sup>4</sup> The question of removal of the President of the University was brought up and such a purpose explicitly disowned. Objection was made to electing a "resident Regent" on the ground that no such office was known to the Constitu-

<sup>3</sup>*Detroit Advertiser and Tribune*, Jan. 1, 1864.

<sup>4</sup>*Ibid.*, Jan. 26, 1864. Regent Brown in an article defending himself in this issue, quotes a letter from F. W. Curtenius telling of a proposed meeting between himself and Dr. Tappan at the time of the State Republican convention to talk over Brown for re-election to the Board of Regents. Mr. Curtenius and Dr. Tappan were agreed on Mr. Brown's merits but the engagement was interfered with in some way and never carried out. This incident indicates that Dr. Tappan was active to a certain extent at least in spring election in 1863.

tion or the laws, but was a device of Levi Bishop to strip the President of power.<sup>5</sup> E. C. Walker who was connected with the fusion ticket for Regent in 1863 was also connected with the movement in 1861 to secure special legislation favoring the President.<sup>6</sup> But there were no intimations of immediate catastrophe. Byron M. Cutcheon, as we have seen in the last Chapter, visited President Tappan a week before commencement, 1863, and sensed no apprehension of any break in his connection with the institution.

But a change was to come. A member of the Class of '53 was back with his wife for the commencement exercises. After they had retired at the hotel the night before commencement day they were awakened by the hurried tramping of several people past their door. Apparently they went into the next room. Shortly afterwards, as the partition was thin, this man and his wife involuntarily heard what was afoot. The gathering in the next room was evidently a secret meeting of the Board of Regents and it was their intention to put Dr. Tappan out at the meeting the next day. It was also agreed by them that the whole matter should be kept until the time for action.<sup>7</sup>

Next day, June 25, the Board met and carried out their preconcerted plan to the letter. Resolutions presented by Regent Brown provided for the removal of Dr. Henry Philip Tappan from the Presidency of the University and from the Professorship of Philosophy, and his son, John L. Tappan, from the office of Librarian.

Before the motion was put Dr. Tappan said: "Gentlemen—Before you pass this resolution I have a few words to say. This is the first special intimation I have had of your intention. I have, indeed, heard some rumors about them this morning, but nothing more. Thus sprung upon me suddenly, I cannot but regard it as an extraordinary proceeding. Of

<sup>5</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, Mar. 30, 31, Apr. 2, 1863; also *Detroit Advertiser and Tribune*, Mar. 9, Apr. 2, 3, 4, 6, 1863.

<sup>6</sup>*Detroit Daily Tribune*, Jan. 28, 1861; also *Detroit Free Press*, Mar. 31, 1863.

<sup>7</sup>*Lane, Michigan Alumnus*, XX, 585.

its constitutionality I have some doubts; of its impropriety I have no doubt. After having been associated nearly six years, it is somewhat remarkable that just at the close of your administration you should have arrived at the conviction that my connection with the University is inconsistent with its interests. After having been repudiated by the people, and when a new board is just about to come into office, it would have been more proper and graceful to have referred the matter to them. If this were done, and a new board should express the opinion that my connection with the University is inconsistent with its interests, I would cheerfully hand in my resignation; but this proceeding, coming at this time and under present circumstances, strongly induces the belief that malice is at the bottom of it. But, Gentlemen, you will act your pleasure. I hope that you will be able to meet your responsibilities to God, and to the State, as fully and as clearly as my conscience tells me I have met mine. There is one consolation, this matter belongs to history: the pen of history is held by the hand of Almighty Justice, and I fear not the record it will make of my conduct, whether private or public, in relation to the affairs of this University. I have nothing more to say, and here I leave you."<sup>8</sup>

The President then withdrew and Regent Baxter took the chair. All voted for the resolution except Regent Baxter, who asked to be excused from voting. Erastus O. Haven was then immediately elected to the Presidency and the Rev. Lucius D. Chapin of Ann Arbor was made Professor of Moral and Intellectual Philosophy.<sup>9</sup>

When the news of this action spread through Ann Arbor it created the most intense astonishment and indignation. The people universally expressed sympathy with Dr. Tappan and indignation against the Board, or against certain members who were known to be at the bottom of the business. An impromptu meeting of students and alumni was held immediately and a committee appointed to draft resolutions express-

<sup>8</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, June 26, 1863.

<sup>9</sup>*Proceedings of the Board of Regents*, 1837-64, 1054-1055.

ing their sentiments. The meeting then adjourned to meet at 8 p. m. at the Court House. At the time appointed citizens and students filled the hall. The committee presented resolutions referring to the "long standing and unfounded hostility to Chancellor Tappan," stating that the opposition had been characterized by the "grossest injustice and downright abuse." Recounting the history of the University under Tappan's administration they urged that the present Board undo the wrong, or that the next Board reverse the action of the present one.

Later in the evening the students procured a band and serenaded Dr. Tappan at his residence. When he appeared he was cheered loudly. He thanked them for the exhibition of their sympathy and kind feeling. He said that he loved them as a father loves his children, and wished them success and prosperity in the future. His record with the University was made, and he was willing to abide the calm judgment of history. He did not seek the place but had been called to it by the unanimous vote of the last Board of Regents. Before God he could say that he had had but one object before him, and that was the success and prosperity of the University of Michigan.<sup>10</sup> The students stoned the house of McIntyre, "the resident Regent," and burned him in effigy.<sup>11</sup>

The news of the dismissal spread rapidly to former students and other friends and admirers of the President. Byron M. Cutcheon tells how it affected the boys in the army. The news reached some of them while they were in camp in front of Vicksburg. "There were curses both loud and deep. An indignation meeting was held at headquarters."<sup>12</sup> In Detroit thirty-six men issued a call to the Alumni to meet June 29 at 7 o'clock at the Michigan Exchange.<sup>13</sup> The *Free Press*, since 1861 owned by H. N. Walker, Tappan's friend, contained a powerful editorial on June 27. The editor had learned from

<sup>10</sup>Detroit *Free Press*, June 27, 1863.

<sup>11</sup>Farrand, *History of the University of Michigan*, 158.

<sup>12</sup>Cutcheon, *Michigan Alumnus*, I, 128-130.

<sup>13</sup>Detroit *Advertiser and Tribune*, June 27, 1863.

Regent Johnson the alleged reasons for removing the President. They were that his influence and example were detrimental to the students morally, that he neglected his duties as Professor of Philosophy, that he was tyrannical with the faculty and disrespectful to the Board. The writer gave these reasons short shrift and expressed the hope that Haven would spurn an offer made under such circumstances. The *Detroit Advertiser and Tribune* of the same date contained an editorial nearly as strong.

On June 26 a meeting of the citizens of Ann Arbor was called at the Court House, 175 names appearing on the call. The Court House was crowded. The Mayor was elected chairman. Strong resolutions were passed condemning the Board and several passionate speeches made. The action of the Regents was an outrage. It was prophesied that the indignation of the people of the State would make these "conspirators quail." It was the last act of "jackasses kicking at a lion." When the meeting adjourned the whole crowd proceeded with a band to Dr. Tappan's residence and serenaded and cheered him until he appeared. He was conducted to the carriage platform in front of the house, where he spoke for about half an hour, closing in a humorous vein.<sup>14</sup>

The *Detroit Advertiser and Tribune*, after attributing the removal to personal spite, stating that Regent Bishop had declared to the editor three years before with an oath that he would accomplish the removal of Dr. Tappan before his term should expire, affirmed that the action of the Board had "stirred the people of Michigan as no event since the firing upon Sumter." It also expressed the fear that if such "Star-Chamber" proceedings were tacitly permitted, no honorable men could be found to take the Presidency or the Professorships.<sup>15</sup>

The meeting called for June 29 at the Michigan Exchange in Detroit was bitter against the Regents. Letters were read

<sup>14</sup>*Ibid.*, June 29, 1863.

<sup>15</sup>*Ibid.*

from Grand Haven, Ann Arbor, Jackson and Monroe and Battle Creek. Enthusiastic speeches were made by several of those present. Dr. Duffield, formerly of the Board, compared the Regents with the men who were at that time in rebellion against the Union. Ashley Pond contended that Dr. Tappan was fairly worshipped by the students and that that fact was proof of his fitness. Others referred to his great services to the State. Strong resolutions were adopted.<sup>16</sup> In this meeting at the Michigan Exchange it was stated that Regent Baxter, who had asked to be excused from voting on the dismissal, had strenuously opposed the removal but had been over ridden and then had nominated Haven to thwart the proposed election of Rev. Chapin of Ann Arbor to the Presidency.<sup>17</sup>

The *Advertiser and Tribune* of July 3 protested editorially against the removal. The meanest criminal has the right of hearing the charges against him, but on this occasion Dr. Tappan had been discharged without a cause being stated. Such arbitrary procedure was contrary to the principles of justice. The writer of the editorial said that he wrote without personal feeling, merely in the interest of a principle.

In accordance with a resolution adopted at the meeting in the Michigan Exchange in Detroit a call was issued to the Alumni for a State Convention. The convention was to occur in the University Chapel July 9, at 11 a. m. The Alumni were urged to come if possible, if not, to send letters. It was announced in the call that, "The citizens will gladly open their doors for the entertainment of all who come."

On July 8 an editorial appeared in the *Marshall Statesman* extremely favorable to Tappan. It expressed confidence that the new Board that was to come into office in six months would do its duty and restore him to the position from which he had been ousted unjustifiably. If the people of Michigan were called upon to vote upon the matter, ninety-nine hundredths of them would, in the judgment of the editorial writer, vote for his restoration. The people would not let their

<sup>16</sup>*Ibid.*, June, 30, 1863.

<sup>17</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, June 30, 1863.

University be attacked in this way. He hoped to hear a general expression from the press of the State.<sup>18</sup>

Pursuant to the call, a large number of Alumni met at the University building July 9. But the doors were found to be closely barred and bolted, and the janitor had special orders to admit no persons to the buildings during the day. The Alumni then assembled in the open air and adjourned to Hangsterfer's Hall, which had been offered them by the proprietor.

There were present representatives from twenty-seven Michigan cities and towns; also from Washington, D. C.; Clarks-ville, Tennessee; Girard, Illinois; Wheelersburg, Ohio; Fred-erickstown, Ohio; Freedom, Ohio; Waterford, Ohio; Cleveland, Ohio; and Champaign, Illinois. Letters were received from thirty-nine alumni scattered over the Old Northwest from St. Louis and Louisville to Cleveland and Detroit and Grand Rapids. Letters were also received from a number of friends of the University, among which was one from H. H. Northrop, a former Regent, containing a dignified but stinging rebuke for the Regents.

Resolutions were prepared condemning the action of the Board and urging Dr. Haven to reconsider his acceptance of the position. Three men opposed the resolutions, Rev. E. H. Pilcher, Rev. A. J. Bigelow, and A. Rynd. They were reported as having come well prepared to argue the matter on a purely sectarian basis. They were finally silenced, according to the news story, by Rev. J. C. Wortly of Detroit who is reported to have reviewed their arguments with scathing criticism. Of course this account must be taken with reservations, as it is plainly partisan. After transacting some minor business the convention adjourned.<sup>19</sup>

A meeting of citizens was held in Jackson, resolutions were drafted, and speeches made.<sup>20</sup> A second meeting was held by Detroit citizens at the Michigan Exchange in that city. Reso-lutions were drafted containing among other things an appeal

<sup>18</sup>Marshall *Statesman*, July 8, 1863.

<sup>19</sup>Detroit *Free Press*, July 11, 1863.

<sup>20</sup>*Ibid.*

to the cities and counties of the State to put on record their frank and decided views of the matter for the benefit of the incoming Board of Regents. A committee was also authorized by motion to correspond with other states.<sup>21</sup> The protest seemed to be in full flood and it is hard to believe after reading the accounts of these meetings that the Board could persist in its attitude, or that Dr. Haven, to whom copies of all resolutions had been sent, could brave public opinion and take the office.

Meanwhile what was Haven doing, and what was his justification of his course? We know that he left his professorship in the University several years earlier for reasons that Winchell would not divulge. According to Haven's *Autobiography*, some of his friends had kept him informed from time to time during the six years of his absence of the state of affairs in the University. Some of the private letters, as well as various articles in the newspapers, had indicated dissatisfaction. The complaints had been that the number of students was rather diminishing than increasing; that the religious people of the State were dissatisfied with the moral influence of the institution; that the faculties were not at peace with each other; that the State rendered no pecuniary aid; and that an antagonism too great to be endured had sprung up between the President and the Regents. At first Haven had been invited, by persons who professed to know the wishes of the Regents, to return to a professorship. This he had declined to consider. He had then been asked if under any circumstances he would accept the presidency. He had answered that if the office was vacant and was offered to him, with the substantial approval of the different faculties, he would accept. But he professed later not to have had the faintest dream that the office would become vacant except by the resignation of the President. Then came the dismissal of Tappan, Haven's unanimous election, a notification by telegram with a request for an immediate reply. He says that he supposed the vacancy

<sup>21</sup>Detroit *Advertiser and Tribune*, July 20, 1863.

had quietly occurred and that all were agreed and harmonious. He accordingly accepted.

Immediately a flood of letters began to pour in upon him informing him that the whole State was indignant; that the alumni, the students, the citizens of Ann Arbor, many citizens of Detroit, had severally held meetings and protested against the action, all expressing the hope that Haven would decline and Tappan be reinstated. Also letters came informing him that a majority of the faculties were really pleased with the change and that if he declined another person would be elected and perhaps the University would be ruined. Propositions had been made to remove one department to Detroit and perhaps the enemies of the institution would take advantage of these circumstances to divide the fund and break it down. Under these conditions he felt it his duty to accept.<sup>22</sup>

And now we notice the conservative side quietly asserting itself. The *Lansing Republican* of July 14, 1863, contained an editorial gently chaffing Dr. Tappan's friends with thinking that no one but he could hold the office of President of the University. It expressed a high regard for Dr. Tappan and an appreciation of his services in building up the University but proceeded to make three points: The Board should not be presumed to have acted from motives of personal revenge; Tappan's friends were unable to say anything against Haven; the appointment was an accomplished fact. The writer of the editorial had been brought reluctantly to the conclusion that the action of the Board was final.<sup>23</sup>

July 6 the University Senate met. With the State on fire with Tappan sentiment and with Tappan's true and tried friends present, here would be an explosion. But nothing spectacular occurred. They passed very quiet resolutions. They did not recognize it as within their "province" to express an opinion upon the propriety of the Regents' action. The interests of the University must always depend on the "cooperation of all those who are employed in any capacity in its service." They

<sup>22</sup>Haven, *Autobiography*, pp. 142-143.

<sup>23</sup>Detroit *Free Press*, July 14, 1863.

recognized the appointment of Dr. Haven as "an accomplished fact" which the best interests of the University would not allow to be treated as "unsettled or open to agitation or doubt," and they extended to Dr. Haven a pledge of cooperation. Present were Williams, Douglass, Boise, Palmer, Cooley, Sager, Walker, Wood and Watson, as well as Winchell. And the resolutions were drafted by Professor Campbell of the Law Department.<sup>24</sup> What could this action mean? The majority of these men were friends of Tappan and yet they were accepting his dismissal passively and taking it as an accomplished fact? Effort was made to interpret the abstention of the Senate from indorsing the dismissal as "no compliment to Dr. Haven."<sup>25</sup> But this effort was feeble. The resolutions had a positive quality and were passed unanimously by a body containing men of weight and independence and of known friendliness to Dr. Tappan. Did they merely accept the dismissal as one of the unjust but irrevocable events in public life? There may have been an element of this canny foresight and philosophical resignation. But there may have been much more involved. The Faculty knew the inside workings of the institution better than did the students and outside friends of the University who were charmed by the President's personality. Whatever their personal attachment for Dr. Tappan may have been, they could not but realize that the personal quarrels could not go on indefinitely. E. Lakin Brown states in the *Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections* that "the faculty nearly all favored the removal."<sup>26</sup> Dr. Lewis Stephen Pilcher, a writer of restraint, says in his *A Surgical Pilgrim's Progress*: "Clashing was inevitable; misunderstandings which might have been avoided or adjusted by a more diplomatic temper were magnified into positive quarrels by the unbending autocratic attitude of the President, matched by an equal obstinancy in asserting their rights and duties by some of the Regents."<sup>27</sup> Andrew D. White says that a small number

<sup>24</sup>*Ibid.*, July 8, 1863.

<sup>25</sup>*Ibid.*, July 9, 1863.

<sup>26</sup>*Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections*, XXX, 485-486.

<sup>27</sup>Pilcher, *A Surgical Pilgrim's Progress*, 100-103.

including Judge Cooley and Professors Frieze, Fasquelle, Boise, and himself, simply maintained an "armed neutrality," standing by the University, and refusing to be drawn into this whirlpool of intrigue and oburgation. Personally, they loved the doctor. Everyone of them besought him to give up the quarrel. He would not; he could not. It went on till the crash came.<sup>28</sup>

With that action by the University Senate, all the popular enthusiasm and announcements of determination must have had a rather hollow sound for Dr. Tappan. The men who had been close to him were already accepting the new situation, probably with a sense of relief. They were loyal to their former head, but they had to face the facts and save the University from further disorganization. September 2, 1863, the *Marshall Statesman*, one of the papers that had been most vigorous in condemning the Board for removing Dr. Tappan, announced the installation of Dr. Haven as President, expressing the belief that he would make "an able and popular President."<sup>29</sup> September 16, 1863, the *Lansing Republican* announced that Dr. Haven had met the Board, formally accepted the position, and entered upon his duties. At the same meeting Brunnow's resignation as Professor of Astronomy was accepted.<sup>30</sup>

Significant of the finality of his dismissal, the *Free Press* of September 19 contained an Ann Arbor letter giving an account of the presentation of a service of plate by the citizens of Ann Arbor to Dr. Tappan. A large number of the professional men, business men, and farmers had contributed for the purpose. The meeting was at Dr. Tappan's residence. A speech of presentation was made by the Mayor and a reply by the recipient. The latter concluded by saying that whatever might be his future relations to the University, or whether in the future he should sustain any relations to it, his best wishes would always attend it. The hope was expressed in the

<sup>28</sup>White, *Autobiography*, I, 280-281.

<sup>29</sup>*Marshall Statesman*, Sept. 2, 1863.

<sup>30</sup>*Lansing State Republican*, Sept. 16, 1863.

heading of the subscription list that the Tappans' absence would be of short duration.<sup>31</sup>

The *Free Press* of October 2, 1863, contained the following account of the inauguration of Dr. Haven the day before:

"This morning, at 10:30 o'clock, a large audience assembled at the new Presbyterian Church to witness the inauguration of the new President, Dr. Haven. A large number of clergymen and others were present.

"The opening address was made by Regent McIntyre. The Regent began by a happy reference to the palmy days of the Republic before the inauguration of 'this cruel rebel war.' This was followed by a short review of the history of the University. One of the duties conferred upon the Board of Regents was to elect a President, and to remove him when the interests of the University might demand it. The Regent proceeded to make public the charges against Dr. Tappan. They were remissness in the discharge of his duties, absence from his post, and unwarranted assumption of dignity and importance. (Hisses, repeatedly renewed, interrupted the enumeration of these charges.) The Regent said that this demonstration on the part of the audience was a specimen of the influences which had been exerted by the late Chancellor. He thought that the time would soon come when those who still opposed the changes made in the University would see their necessity and policy, and say to the Board of Regents, 'Well done, good and faithful servants!' (Hisses and faint cheers.) The Regent then contrasted the character of the new Chancellor with that of the old, referring to the peculiar qualifications of Dr. Haven for the position to which he had been called.

"The remarks of Mr. McIntyre were continually interrupted by hisses. They were scurrilous in the extreme and the manifestations showed what the audience thought of them."<sup>32</sup>

Events were marching along, and every day that passed made the new order more secure. It is almost unthinkable that any new Board of Regents would have dared to upset an arrange-

<sup>31</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, Sept. 19, 1863.

<sup>32</sup>*Ibid.*, Oct. 2, 1863.

ment fortified by such a succession of perfectly legal steps and backed by such a weight of conservative opinion. Even with unquestioned right on Tappan's side it would have been a doubtful procedure to make a change after so many commitments had been made and so many adjustments effected.

But Tappan's friends would not accept the finality of the decision and resolved to leave no stone unturned in their effort to undo what they regarded as a flagrantly unjust act. It was discovered that according to the constitution of the State the new Board of Regents must elect a President at their first meeting.<sup>33</sup> This provision gave them a new objective to work for. To get a reconsideration of a permanent appointment was a formidable undertaking, but merely to enter their candidate in a race for election looked easier. As the time for the assembling of the new Board drew nearer the fight waxed hot.

In this contest the *Detroit Tribune* and the *Free Press* were strong for Tappan's restoration. The former had always been friendly to him, and the *Free Press* had passed in 1861 into the hands of his personal friend, H. N. Walker, the man who had been the leading spirit among the citizens of Detroit in raising money for the observatory. They not only threw their columns open to communications in his behalf but supported him in editorials. When reading the confident and convincing articles which appeared, it is impossible not to believe that there was a chance of their securing their end.

The Regents attempted to explain the removal of Tappan in their report to the Superintendent of Public Instruction. They referred to lack of harmony between the President and the Board of Regents and between the President and the Faculty. They also insinuated that his habits of drinking wine, beer, and ale afforded ground for their action.<sup>34</sup> These claims were attacked in two vigorous editorials in the *Free Press*. The *Free Press* was inclined to credit the statements about lack of harmony but they regarded the charge of immoral influence

<sup>33</sup>*Ibid.*, Sept. 22, 1863.

<sup>34</sup>*Twenty-seventh Annual Report of the Superintendent of Public Instruction*, 96-99.

as downright dishonesty. If he had knuckled down to the Board, flattered their prejudices, and failed to exhibit his superior knowledge of the wants of the University he would still have been President.<sup>35</sup> And the next day the *Free Press* spoke again to similar effect. Why had the Regents done this thing as the last act of their official existence? Dr. Tappan had been subjected to long and systematic persecution by the retiring Board. Did "These Regents" think that they had done a great service to the University and the State in getting rid of such men as Tappan and Brunnow? Wherever Dr. Tappan might be, his name would be safe with the young men who had sat under his instruction.<sup>36</sup>

A letter appeared in the *Detroit Advertiser and Tribune* charging the Republican Party with having had no experience in management and consequently having used poor judgment in selecting candidates for the Regency, not one of whom had a liberal education. "Ten bulls in a china shop, of course would make wild work with the crockery ware." In the election in the spring of 1863 the people had "decided to sustain the President," only one of the present Regents being re-elected. Why the indecent haste in filling the position?<sup>37</sup> December 30, 1863, another letter appeared in the same paper arraigning the Regents at length.<sup>38</sup> The report of the Visitors to the University to the Superintendent of Public Instruction was equally favorable to Tappan and condemnatory of the Board and its policies.<sup>39</sup>

At last the time for the meeting of the new Board arrived. January 1, 1864, the Regents who had been elected the spring before came together for their first meeting. So violent had the feeling of the supporters of Tappan been, that it must have seemed to them almost criminal for the Board even to wait for memorials asking his reinstatement to be presented. In the meeting Regent Knight presented a petition signed by 320

<sup>35</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, Nov. 20, 1863.

<sup>36</sup>*Ibid.*, Nov. 21, 1863.

<sup>37</sup>*Detroit Advertiser and Tribune*, Dec. 19, 1863.

<sup>38</sup>*Ibid.*, Dec. 30, 1863.

<sup>39</sup>*Twenty-seventh Annual Report of the Superintendent of Public Instruction*, 121-125.

students asking that Dr. Tappan be restored to his former position. After the reading of the petition Regent Gilbert moved that the students' memorial and the other papers of similar import be referred to a committee of the whole and made the special order of business at 4 o'clock in the afternoon. When that hour arrived they went into secret session. To sense the atmosphere of the campus that afternoon, we must realize that most of Tappan's supporters were boys and young men passionately attached to him as the heroic figure of their college days. They had imbibed from him a supercilious attitude toward practical political adjustments. How could any practical consideration come in for a moment against the claims of justice? What were the Regents doing? Why were they so long about it? Some one may have heard laughter coming from their room and realized with a shock that they were talking the question over genially among themselves instead of viewing it with indignation. The blood grows colder as we advance in years! Finally the meeting ended and it became known that they had adopted a series of resolutions requesting the students to withdraw their memorial.<sup>40</sup> This must have seemed at first a serious set back, but, as it became known, it may have appeared as a favorable omen. At least the field was still open.

The fight was on in earnest. The Board had evidently suspended judgment and the question was, who could bring the more influence to bear before the next meeting. The reflections on the character of the previous Board of Regents drew a well written defense from Ex-Regent Brown.<sup>41</sup> An unsigned but rather able letter to the same paper of January 25, speaks of the effort of friends of Dr. Tappan to cultivate favorable sentiment by a series of indignation meetings over the State. In order to accomplish their purpose they charge "political," "sectarian" and "personal" enmities. The writer fears that such a campaign will damage the University. Even if the discharge of Dr. Tappan was wrong, it would now be wrong to

<sup>40</sup>Detroit *Free Press*, Jan. 3, 1864.

<sup>41</sup>Detroit *Advertiser and Tribune*, Jan. 26, 1864.

depose Dr. Haven without reason. Two wrongs will never make a right. And the article contained a threat that if Dr. Haven were deposed without cause, his friends would rally to him and they would be neither few nor feeble. This argument for Dr. Haven would have seemed to us more convincing if he had not been involved in faculty intrigue and if he had not accepted the position so hastily. But the communication showed how little chance there was of getting Tappan restored.

"Spectator" replied vigorously and pointedly. Every word went home. The Board had remained silent: they had made insinuations against Dr. Tappan's moral influence; they had found the University prosperous and had left it worse off in every way; their final act was "cruel, dangerous and cowardly." It was the outcry of an indignant friend for a real leader who had been outrageously treated.<sup>42</sup>

An editorial in the *Free Press* sarcastically referring to the charge that Dr. Tappan was absent from the University a great deal, refers to the fact that one Professor is now absent in the New York Legislature and making abolition speeches, while another who has been engaged in rendering the geology of the State mysterious is in the South investigating some abandoned cotton plantations.<sup>43</sup> This may have been clever, but cleverness seldom moves boards and assemblies.

In the midst of this conflict the University Senate spoke again. Whereas it had been represented that the late Board of Regents had interfered with the interior management of the University, of assuming the exercise of duties properly belonging to its educational officers and so forth; and whereas these insinuations had in some cases proceeded from persons who might be supposed to possess some means of knowledge and so forth, they resolved, "That the late Board of Regents have uniformly treated the various Faculties of the University with courteous consideration and have in no case that we are informed of infringed in any degree upon their usual prerogatives, or attempted to interfere with them in discharge of their

<sup>42</sup>*Ibid*, Feb. 4, 1864.

<sup>43</sup>*Detroit Free Press*, Feb. 16, 1864.

duties; and that in our opinion the internal management of this institution has in no respect been injured or diverted from its proper custody by the action of the late Board." These resolutions were unanimously adopted.<sup>44</sup> Effort was made to discredit them<sup>45</sup> but, with Williams, Boise, Campbell, Cooley, and Frieze present, the action was undoubtedly independent and sincere. Whatever Dr. Tappan's merits, and they were undoubtedly great, the faculty were afraid to invite further upheavals.

On February 6, 1864, the *Review by Rev. Dr. H. P. Tappan of His Connection with the University of Michigan* came out as a pamphlet. He had been requested to write it by "many of the donors to the 'Detroit Observatory,'" as well as by a committee of the Alumni. A perusal of this statement shows conclusively that to restore him to the Presidency of the University would have necessitated a complete reorganization of the institution. He gave a long and intimate narrative of the course of his administration. In this account a number of men still on the faculty were mentioned in no favorable terms. Among them were Winchell, Boise, and Watson. That he could have resumed the position of president with them in the faculty after publishing such assertions about them seems out of the question. The fact that he was incapable of understanding his opponents' motives, must have appeared plain to anyone who read this review without prejudice.

When the Board met in adjourned meeting in February, the question of the memorials favoring the restoration of Dr. Tappan was taken up. Five such addresses were to be considered: one signed by people in Detroit, Monroe, Jackson, Marshall, and Ann Arbor; one by all the members of the Board preceding the late Board, now in the State, with one exception; an address of the Alumni; a communication of citizens of Detroit; a memorial from citizens of Allegan; and one

<sup>44</sup>Detroit *Advertiser and Tribune*, Jan. 16, 1864.

<sup>45</sup>Detroit *Free Press*, Jan. 20, 1864.

from Battle Creek. The consideration was made the subject of a secret session.<sup>46</sup>

The story of what happened is told by Haven in his *Autobiography*. At this meeting the Rev. George Duffield of Detroit and Bishop M'Closkey appeared to urge the re-election of Tappan. When the Board was about to hear the addresses of the committee, the only avowed friend of the proposal on the Board made a motion that the meeting adjourn to attend the funeral of an eminent citizen who had been a great friend of Tappan's and had been filling the streets and saloons with talk on the matter. The idea was to commit the Board tacitly to Tappan's cause in this way. The motion carried and the Board and the expectant crowd that had gathered to hear the memorials discussed, dispersed. When the Board got together in the evening, Duffield and M'Closkey, having engagements in Detroit, could not be there to present the address as intended. As a result the Board met quietly by themselves, considered the matter, and referred it to a committee, which presented a report advising that no change be made. This report was accepted and adopted. Haven tells us solemnly that this adjournment for a funeral was an act of Providence.<sup>47</sup> But Haven was a man with a twinkle in his eye, and we suspect him of having his tongue in his cheek.

Tappan and Haven stand in sharp contrast. The former was a blunderer in nearly every political relationship. He was often tactless and usually without humor. In relation to low-bred men like Bishop he was too sensitive, never able to forget his wounds. But he understood the ideal of a university as distinguished from that of a secondary school and succeeded in popularizing it by the sheer force of his personality. In Dr. Angell's words: "He was the largest figure of a man that ever appeared on the Michigan campus." During the generation which followed the time of his dismissal, his "boys," to whom he had imparted his passionate ideal, came to occupy influen-

<sup>46</sup>*Ibid.*, Feb. 17, 1864.

<sup>47</sup>Haven, *Autobiography*, 148-149.

tial positions in the State and were able to further the interests of the University.

Haven was a different kind of man. He was much shrewder and, so far as practical effects were concerned, much farther-sighted. As we have seen, when the newspaper attacks were made upon Tappan in the early fifties, Haven, being then on the faculty, was not above entering the fight in defence of the President under an assumed name. Equally characteristic was his handling of the situation upon his arrival in Ann Arbor in the fall of 1863. Many of the citizens would not even speak to him personally, and it was soon rumored that he was intemperate, and all kinds of slanders were started. To meet this opposition, he took occasion to hint to the respectable citizens, who were interested in business prosperity, that it would be well to secure harmony and stability if they wished their city to prosper. At the same time he assured them that he did not intend to stay unless the new Board of Regents should re-elect him.<sup>48</sup> He also had a threatening time with the students, but he managed to circumvent them with his usual shrewdness. His program was to accomplish as much as he could for the students, to allow no misunderstandings or dissensions among the professors, and to recommend the University to the State.<sup>49</sup> All sectarianism he discouraged, but he did not neglect genuine Christianity. Possibly significant of the changed order of things, he encouraged the meetings of a temperance society among the students. Probably such a "safe and sane" administration was what the University needed at the time; but it lacked prophetic vision, it had no Platonic idea of a university, and it had no devoted band of followers.

Though we recognize the logic of events and admit Tappan's defects, we cannot help remembering his great idealism and contrasting his qualities with the spirit of some of his opponents. When in this mood we humanly rejoice in the vigorous remarks of two of his profound admirers though they were in

<sup>48</sup>*Ibid.*, 143.

<sup>49</sup>*Ibid.*, 149.

some respects unhistorical. Dr. Barnard, editor of the *American Journal of Education*, spoke of the removal as "an act of savage, unmitigated barbarism", "the work of malignant personal enemies, of small, half-educated bar-room politicians, or religious bigots, clothed with a little brief authority."<sup>50</sup> And Dr. Angell said, a great number of years later, that he was "stung to death by gnats."<sup>51</sup>

---

<sup>50</sup>*American Journal of Education*, XIII, 541.

<sup>51</sup>James B. Angell—Conversation with the writer.

## THE CLARK SCHOOL

BY ORLANDO W. STEPHENSON

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE history of education in Michigan would not be complete without an account of the seminary for young ladies conducted in Ann Arbor by Mary H. Clark and her sisters from 1839 to 1875. The character and management of the institution were largely determined by the early training and background of the three women who conducted it. The father, an Episcopal clergyman, brought the family to Michigan in the late thirties, living a short time near Brighton, and again for a number of months in St. Clair County. The young ladies were educated at the famous school for girls kept by Mrs. Emma Willard,<sup>1</sup> in Troy, New York. Mrs. Willard was one of the foremost educators of her day, and the author of a number of books. The Clark sisters held her in highest esteem, often quoting from her textbooks, and voicing her opinions against co-education. The methods and lofty ideals of the Willard school were brought by the Clark sisters to the wilderness of Michigan where they were implanted in the hearts of a large number of young women. From thence the ideals went out to the next generation and the next, and even to this day are a part of our rich heritage.

The appearance and talents of the three Clark sisters varied greatly. The most able one was Mary H., a small nail-biting, nervous creature with a face one would long remember. The profile was striking. The chin, lips and nose were strong in outline, the lines of the jaw and the forehead clearly defined, brows heavy, and the unusually large brown eyes were shaded by long lashes that went well with her wealth of beautiful black hair. Her skin was very dark, and when the girls were permitted to plait her hair they often were allowed to give their teacher the make-up of an Indian.

---

<sup>1</sup>Well known also as the author of the beautiful song, "Rocked in the Cradle of the Deep."



MISS MARY H. CLARK

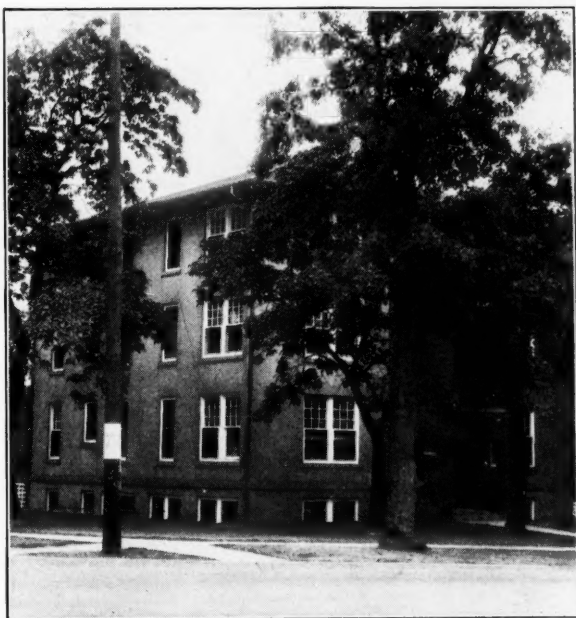
Miss Mary Clark rose at five o'clock in the morning and busied herself at something all day long. She fairly ran when she walked, and in conversation was animated in the extreme. Very often she would go visiting just before the dinner hour, expecting to be invited to eat, as she usually was. News of the day, and much gossip, came to her in this way, a large portion of which she passed on to her pupils during the "conversation hour," or during the class in "general knowledge."

The special intellectual interest of this lady was in the study of botany. In 1837, the Legislature authorized a geological survey of the State, and Governor Stevens T. Mason gave his approval to the measure. Dr. Abram Sager was then the state's leading botanist. Within a few years he, Dr. John Wright and Professor George P. Williams, the latter the first resident professor of the University, made a fine collection of native plants, embracing a hundred different orders. This collection came into the possession of Mary H. Clark, and she, with the help of her pupils, increased it to two thousand species. This valuable work helped to form the basis of similar botanical work later carried on in the University.

Next to Mary H. Clark in importance in the Clark School was her sister Chloe. Miss Chloe was equally striking in her appearance but in a less refined and different way. Her hair was long and dark, hanging in great curls around her shoulders and well down her back. She was looked upon by the pupils as the real ornament of the school. Though she lacked much of being beautiful, she was exceedingly attractive, and her numerous beaux, including both young men of the town and students in the University, took great delight in her company. Her wit was remarkably keen, her conversational powers extraordinary, and she had the habit of complimenting her listeners right and left. Those who remember her best associated with her two things not altogether to her credit; she was fond of wearing stockings which would have been white had they been introduced often enough to the wash cauldron; and she was equally fond of carrying about in her arms a greasy, yellow poodle,

which had an unpleasant habit of snapping at the heels of inoffensive strangers.

The name of the third sister was Roby. She was at first little more than house-keeper, but she soon took on the more dignified title of matron, and still later became "Associate Principal." She had little part in the management of the school, however, but she filled a position in the scheme of



The Last Building to House the Clark School,  
Now a Flat

things no other one of the sisters could have filled. There was a fourth sister, Jessie, a pupil in the school, who was a great favorite with her classmates, and the particular pet of her older sisters.

The Clark School was opened November 18, 1839, in a brick building on Main Street, Ann Arbor, which was afterwards known as the "Argus Block." In December, of the same year,

they moved to the northeast corner of Fourth Avenue and Liberty Street. In August, 1841, the school was moved to the Charles Fuller house on Main Street, a few doors north of the main entrance to the present Mack store. The next move was to the corner of Huron and Ashley (then Second) streets, the building later being incorporated in the Leonard Hotel. After nine years the school was taken to the Schetterly house on North Fourth Avenue where the sisters made their home. This building burned July 4, 1865. A big Independence Day celebration was being held in Gregory Hall, several hundred people taking part. Just at the close of the exercises, when some three hundred returned Civil War veterans were rising from the banquet table, and the local firemen were preparing to seat themselves, a fire broke out in a wooden building adjoining the brick residence and school of the Misses Clark. The firemen hurried away, but for lack of water were able to save only the furniture, the doors and the windows. These were stored and later put into the last building to house the school, the three-story building (now a flat) erected on two lots at the corner of Division and Kingsley streets. Miss Mary Clark obtained the funds for this building as free gifts from friends and former pupils. Soon after the school was opened in its final home, Miss Mary fell down one of the stairs, breaking a small bone in her ankle. This resulted in a slight but permanent lameness.

As the school moved about from place to place, other teachers were employed, here and there the name of a man appearing in the different lists of assistants. Few of these teachers remained long with the Clarks. The explanation for this seems to be in the general tendency of the teachers of those days to roam about, employing their talents wherever and whenever the inducements were most attractive. The New England system of having the older pupils act as monitors was employed as a measure of economy. These girls often taught the younger ones, heard their lessons, and at times were called upon to do some of the work the housekeeper was supposed to do.

This old time boarding school was kept open most of the year, beginning about the first Monday in September, and closing a few days during the holidays. A vacation of a week came early in February, another the first of May, and a long vacation was taken between the end of the third week in July and the opening of the next school year. This year was divided into two terms of twenty-two weeks each, or into four quarters of eleven weeks each.

That the renown of the Clark school was more than local is evident from the fact that more than a third of the total number of girls attending lived outside of Ann Arbor, mostly in the southeastern part of the State. During the year 1848-49, for example, of the total enrollment of ninety-seven, thirty-six came from other places, some from as far away as East Avon, New York. That year girls were enrolled from Pontiac, Milan, Jackson, Coldwater, Manchester, Owosso, Plainfield, Bellevue, and Massilon, Ohio. Many found it impossible to go home during the shorter vacations, but at the end of the third week in July there was a general clearing out, and this was followed by a great house-cleaning at the school.

Some extracts from old newspapers and annual reports will give an idea of the character of the work done. The report for 1849 stated that "Though it would be impossible to enumerate all our rules—to prevent erroneous impressions, we would say, that boarders are not allowed to accept invitations to walk, ride or visit, without permission; or unless from family or friends, to receive calls except on Friday and Saturday evenings, and then with the Vice Principal. On Wednesday or Saturday afternoons they attend to their shopping, returning calls, etc., and on no other days, as it is not our desire to promote undue love of society, unfitting alike for present duties and future usefulness; but an acquaintance with the courtesies of life—those observations resulting from the law of kindness and sound conventional rule." Parents and guardians were "requested to visit the school, and judge for themselves its discipline and mode of instruction. Every Friday morning the studies of the week are reviewed, when visit-

ors are admitted. Also on Wednesday afternoon, semi-monthly, is the reading of *original compositions*, to which particular attention is paid, each of the senior class being required to write one for every week, also keep a diary. To enlarge the sphere of general intelligence, the intervening Wednesday afternoons are devoted to lectures or some profitable reading from carefully selected books, the young ladies meanwhile employing themselves with the needle." When the original compositions were read, the hour was enlivened by selections from "The Wild Flower" a periodical published once a fortnight by the pupils themselves, beginning with the year 1840. Some of the compositions were printed in this paper, among the titles being, "Summer on the Hillside of the Meadow, and Summer in the Heart," "The Depths," "The Real Lady," "The Value of a Good Book," and "The Effect of Example."

The Clark School, like the Emma Willard School itself, had its Boards of Visitors. Some of these boards were made up of the most distinguished citizens. One of the earliest of these included the names of Rev. Charles C. Taylor and Professors Williams, Whedon, Ten Brook, Sager, Douglas and Fasquelle. Miss Mary Clark invited these men "to be present, when convenient at the weekly reviews, but especially attend during the semi-annual examinations."

The books studied in this school bore names which sound strange in our day, but they give a hint of what the girls were wont to stock their minds with nearly three generations ago. Among the books were: Playfair's Euclid; Brocklesby's Meteorology; Mrs. Willard's Universal History, Mrs. Willard's Republic of America; Olmstead's Natural Philosophy; Burritt's Geography of the Heavens; Watts: On the Mind; Paley's Natural Theology and Evidences of Christianity; Abercrombie's Intellectual Powers; Abercrombie's Moral Feedings; Butler's Analogy; and Kane's Elements of Criticism.

In the early days the charges were, for the English branches, \$2.50 for juvenile, and \$5.00 for senior classes per quarter. In addition to these fees, there were certain special charges: "For Music on the Piano, with the use of the Instrument,

\$8.00; French, \$5.00; Latin, \$2.00; Board, including washing, lights, etc., \$2.00 per week. For those who have their washing done away from the house, the charge is \$1.75 per week. For board, always a part payment in advance. Young ladies-boarders are requested to come supplied with their own towels and napkins."

Teachers and pupils alike were aroused mornings at daylight, or before, according to the season; and soon after breakfast, the rooms being set in order, school was opened for the day. A chapter from the Bible was chosen, and each one of the older girls was required to read a verse. All then knelt, and Miss Mary Clark read a "collect" from the English Book of Common Prayer. All joined in repeating the Lord's Prayer, and the morning devotionals were ended. At the end of the day all joined in singing "Lord Dismiss Us with Thy Blessing." Sundays, the girls were required to attend one or another of the village churches, most of them going in a body with Miss Mary Clark. Later they attended the University commencements and other exercises in the same manner. After University Hall was opened in 1873 the girls, with their teachers, sat in the first rows of seats in the left gallery of the auditorium, and it was there that the final illness came upon Miss Mary Clark.

During the school year a number of things served to amuse and entertain the girls, some of a trivial, and some of a more serious character. When the school was located on the corner of Huron and Ashley streets, the front part of the building was used to accommodate the boarders of a Mr. and Mrs. Irving, grandparents of some of the O'Briens of the present day. The school rooms were up stairs over the rooms of these boarders. Often the young ladies would play jokes on the boarders, and then hide on a large square platform built over a brick oven, which was housed in a woodshed at the rear of the boarding house. The girls would climb up there by means of a ladder, and, once up, would pull the ladder after them. There they would whisper their secrets and compose paragraphs of nonsense for their diaries. The braver among them

would sometimes read these paragraphs during the Wednesday afternoon programs, often to the great annoyance of the Principal.

One of the events which both amused and entertained the girls and numerous friends and former students was the quarter-centenary celebration in Roger's Hall, held on the evening of Friday, November 18, 1864. Present were several from distant cities, and all together the ladies represented every year of the school's history, and also every town in Washtenaw County. The patrons, all former pupils, were as follows: Mrs. Caroline Burger Gott, 1845-47; Mrs. Mary K. Brigham Sinclair, 1839-45; Mrs. Maria White Hiscock, 1842-45; Mrs. A. A. Goodrich North, 1839-40; Mrs. Elizabeth Everest Schoff, 1843; Mrs. Fanny Kingsley Chapin, 1846-53; Mrs. Josephine M. Smith, 1844-60; Mrs. D. H. Pope Pray, 1846-58; Mrs. Ernestine Buchoz Bour, 1848-52; Mrs. Heloise Buchoz North, 1850-54; Mrs. Therisa Scott Deane, 1849-54; Mrs. Jane E. Howard Mosher, 1850-54; Mrs. Mary Cook Avery, 1847-50; Mrs. Martha Williams Landon, 1845-47; Mrs. Emma Imus Loomis, 1853-56; Mrs. Mary Wheeler Buckland, 1841-43; Miss Mary White, 1851-57, and Mrs. E. E. Gibson Du Bois, secretary of the committee. Miss Cynthia Sager, daughter of Dr. Abram Sager, is the only one now living in Ann Arbor who attended this celebration. During the evening, speeches were made, and letters of regret read from those who had found it impossible to attend. A beautiful and costly tea set was presented to the Clark sisters, after which a splendid supper was served.

The graduating exercises of this school were held every year beginning with the first class of two young ladies in 1841 up to the time of Mary Clark's death in 1875. The two first graduates were Miss Martha E. Ladd and Miss Caroline H. Cuming.

Mary H. Clark appeared in public for the last time at the Commencement exercises of the University. She was taken ill during the exercises and had to be taken home before they were over. She grew steadily worse and when, on Wednesday noon, June 30, her physician came to call, he found her sleeping her last sleep. She was survived by her sister Chloe, but the

school was never opened again. Nineteen miles north of Ann Arbor in the little cemetery of Brighton one may still see the monument former pupils erected to the memory of these two women. It is a simple block of dark grey granite three feet two inches in height and twenty-two inches wide. On the beveled front these words may still be read:

"Mary H. Clark, 1813-1875.

Chloe A. Clark, 1817-1880.

A. Memorial From Their Scholars."

In a private letter to a friend in Ann Arbor, President Henry P. Tappan, from his retreat in Basel, Switzerland, August 7, 1875, wrote a brief estimate of the character of Miss Mary Clark. "Mrs. Tappan," he wrote, "grieves very much over the loss of Miss Clark, to whom she was strongly attached. She was one of the noblest and most excellent of women."

*Pageant of Michigan*

THE BEGINNINGS  
AN HISTORICAL PAGEANT  
BY  
WILLIAM CHAUNCY LANGDON

Produced at the Michigan State College,  
East Lansing, Michigan, June 10, 1927.

THE PIONEERS OF MICHIGAN

From north and south and east they came,  
The Pioneers of Michigan,  
To build a State and make a name  
Amid the Lakes of Michigan;  
They built their homes, they cleared, they mined  
The soils, the ores of Michigan,  
And raised thereon their sturdy kind,  
The men and girls of Michigan.

As long as her Great Waters make  
Peninsulas of Michigan,  
So long her children for her sake  
Shall give their lives for Michigan,  
And following onward through the night  
The shining star of Michigan,  
Bear on her fame toward the light,  
True Pioneers of Michigan!

(Copyright)

---

PROLOGUE

The Band plays the music of The Pioneers of Michigan and continues into the March based on that music. From the entrances to the lower or Historic Stage come groups of Indians of the early time. At first they show hostility toward each other; then stop, parley, briefly smoke the peace pipe, and part toward the two sides of the stage.

Then there enter from the north French soldiers. They display the blue and white flag, the Lilies of France, and their officer draw-

ing his sword takes possession of the region. They approach the Indians and make friends with them. At almost the same time, there enter from the north Catholic priests with their wooden crosses, and skirting around behind those now on the stage, Coureurs du Bois. The priests start to instruct the Indians; the Coureurs to mingle with them.

Then from the south, there come British soldiers carrying the Union Jack. Those already on the stage draw back to the north. The French stand forward with their flag, the Indians draw back behind them, but showing signs of hostility. To the British come some American Colonists in homespun. The British advance upon the French and the French retire the way they had come, out at the north. This accomplished, the British turn haughtily upon the Americans. More Americans come from the south, some of them in uniform, buff and blue and with the Stars and Stripes. In turn they confront the British, who perforce retire to the north, off the stage. The Americans mingle with the Coureurs and the Indians in friendly manner, and direct them to either side of the stage, themselves grouping in the center. They then turn around, their backs to the audience, and raise their arms full length in salutation, as from the north entrance of the upper level, the Ideal Stage, appears the figure of Michigan, attended by the figure of Education, in blue, with a long staff on the end of which is the model of a Wolverine instead of a spearhead. She comes over the steps and stands on the second step of the Dais, in the center, and raises her staff. All those on the lower level,—Americans, Indians and Coureurs, acclaim her with outstretched arms and weapons. A group of the Americans go up the steps, each way, to the upper level, and kneel in homage. From the two entrances on the upper level, north and south, come groups of the French and the British, acclaiming her, and standing back in the tableau on either side. From the two entrances on the lower level come more Americans in the dress of the period after the War of 1812, men, women, and children, mostly farmers, and group themselves in the center with the Indians in the back on either side. The music comes to an end.

---

#### 1817: INSPIRATION

From the north, on the Historic level comes the tall and gaunt but kindly figure of the Sulpician, Father Gabriel Richard. He approaches the Americans and starts to instruct them.

**FATHER GABRIEL** Come, my children, your Heavenly Father has sent me to teach you and to save you from your sins!

Some, mostly young people and children, listen to him. A little after, from the other side, the south, comes the intellectual figure of the Rev. John Monteith, the Presbyterian minister. He also approaches the Americans in the center and starts to talk with them in order to teach them.

**REV. JOHN MONTEITH** Come and listen to me my friends, that I may teach you the truth, for the truth of God shall make you free!

Some of those not gathered around Father Gabriel listen to him. The two teachers show displeasure at the interference by each in the work of the other. They approach each other in emphatic protest.

**FATHER GABRIEL** Is not the difficulty of this mission great enough already, but that you, a Protestant, must come and interfere with the work that God has sent me here to do?

**REV. JOHN MONTEITH** That God has sent you here to do? That your Church, your Pope has sent you here to do!

**FATHER GABRIEL** The Church? Yes, verily. And who then sent the Church?

**REV. JOHN MONTEITH** I have come to teach these people here the truth, and I shall do it.

They separate, each returning to his group of people. Each tries somewhat to prevent the other from gaining new adherents, but there are more of those who pay no attention to either than of those who listen to them. Then discouraged they turn to each other again.

**FATHER GABRIEL** Truly the task is greater than both of us together can accomplish!

**REV. JOHN MONTEITH** Truly it is indeed!

FATHER GABRIEL Why should we then not work together? We are alone here in the wilderness, though nonetheless forever in the Hands of God.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH He will correct all error in our teaching. And there is much these people need to know on which we can agree.

FATHER GABRIEL I am a Sulpician, Father Gabriel Richard. Our order stands for education.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH I am a Presbyterian, the Rev. John Monteith. With clear and honest mind we preach and teach the truth of God.

FATHER GABRIEL In all that has to do with civil education we can unite, though in religion and in all the Church proclaims we must work apart.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Agreed, my friend. In religious instruction, which is contained in the Holy Word of God, we will work apart, but we will not interfere with one another.

FATHER GABRIEL (with kindly humor) While I would that I might bring all these poor sheep of His into the One Fold of His Church,—I will admit that what you teach them may be better for them than not to be taught at all.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH (grasping Father Gabriel's hand again cordially) We understand each other. Our inspiration in all we do is of the highest.

FATHER GABRIEL It is from on High.

The two Teachers call their people together and rearranging the groups somewhat, taking one from here and putting him there, start them afresh on their studies. A few books are brought and several poring over one book take up again their work. Mr. Monteith with a wide board and a piece of chalk or by drawing figures in the sand instructs in geometry and surveying, then letting the students work along themselves. But back of these studying young people there is always a background of older people, hardy but illiterate pioneers, engaged in suggestions of outdoor labor of one kind or another,—indicated by a continual quiet coming and going with various tools and implements, axes, rifles, etc. As the work proceeds, the two,

Father Gabriel and the Rev. John Monteith, stand together to one side, the right, watching the results of their joint labors.

FATHER GABRIEL The welfare of the people all through these peninsulas depends on what we now have started.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH The Government of the Territory ought to give support directly to the education of the young.

FATHER GABRIEL The Governor did support my schools for boys and girls there at Detroit for many years.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH The Territorial Legislature should assume the growing burden. And who will so cordially endorse this work as our Chief Justice?

FATHER GABRIEL He will advise us on the law and help us plan our institutions.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Augustus B. Woodward, Chief Justice of the Court of Michigan. He is with us.

Judge Woodward comes in among the Michigan pioneers from the south. He is a man of presence, formal and impressive in personality, vigorous and eccentric in manner, but not the less direct and forcible. He commands the genuine respect of the people, who make way for him as he comes in through them. He wears his robe of office as Chief Justice, but wears it easily, comfortably. He has a roll of papers in his hand.

FATHER GABRIEL Your Honor.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Your Honor.

CHIEF JUSTICE Your Reverence. My dear Sir. What do you think one of my colleagues called me? Yes, a Judge upon the Bench beside me! "A wild theorist, fit only to extract sunbeams from cucumbers!" But his remarks, I claim, were not relevant to the cause before the Court. Therefore they were obiter dicta!

He laughs, and the two Teachers laugh with him.

CHIEF JUSTICE However that would be a great achievement! "Sunbeams from the lowly trailing cucumber!" If in truth I could do that, I should consider it the greatest accomplishment in my career!

REV. JOHN MONTEITH You take him literally, in your humor, and disregard—

CHIEF JUSTICE Literally or figuratively,—I care not which! Sunbeams,—the essence of the greatest source of energy in the universe. To draw that power from out the earth, from out our Frenchmen's salad and our Yankee pickles,—ha!! (He muses a moment) I am deeply interested in the sun. I am writing now a little book, Considerations on the Substance of the Sun. For I believe the sun is all made of Electron, which is a name that I have given—but you shall read my book. Sunbeams out of cucumbers! Literally or figuratively—that were a thing to do!

FATHER GABRIEL It is figuratively that we would consider it with you, please your Honor.

CHIEF JUSTICE You interested in cucumbers and the sun? (He laughs boisterously)

REV. JOHN MONTEITH We are. Or in a task at least as great,—or greater.

CHIEF JUSTICE Yes?

FATHER GABRIEL To extract the sunbeams of intelligence from out these people here. The light the Sun of God pours down upon them, to draw it forth by education.

CHIEF JUSTICE Yes. (His manner becomes serious and grave as he turns all his attention upon the question). It is greater. It is the same. What can I do? I am with you.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Michigan should organize a system of education for its people, beginning from the ground up. The Government should undertake it.

CHIEF JUSTICE A noble concept! A noble concept!

REV. JOHN MONTEITH We would ask you to draw the bill to be enacted by the Legislature into law.

CHIEF JUSTICE Beginning from the ground and so on up? Beginning from the *top*! The sun sends *down* its rays of light and heat and fructifies the earth.

FATHER GABRIEL But it is these people here and now whom we must educate. It is a practical matter of immediate importance.

CHIEF JUSTICE A lofty institution there should be created by the Legislature, which should be as the sun in Michigan, shedding from the skies upon our people north and south through all our peninsulas its influence, the warmth and light of education! That way would be most practical. From the top down, I say, always!

REV. JOHN MONTEITH A university?

CHIEF JUSTICE A university. But *different*. Adapted to the needs of Michigan. It may well be the first one of its kind and therefore should not be called a university, but should have a new name of its own.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH But would people know then what it was?

CHIEF JUSTICE Let them come and see! Then will they know. It should be free from precedent to do its work according to the need and the conditions here in Michigan.

FATHER GABRIEL That is the practical point.

CHIEF JUSTICE It is a thrilling thought you have struck forth from out your labors for these people! Certainly I will draw a bill to be enacted into law and count it as the greatest thing in my career.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Drawn by your Honor it is certain the Legislature would pass it; it is certain it would stand.

Judge Woodward on the back of the papers in his hand begins to jot down notes for the bill.

CHIEF JUSTICE The education of the people is important to the existence of the State itself and should be assumed by the Government as a state duty. That duty is unlimited. The Government should offer education to its people in every field of life, in every kind of knowledge,—not only elementary education, Father Gabriel, but higher education such as is afforded by the greatest colleges in all

the land, the greatest universities in all the world. All should be at the disposal of the youth of Michigan. The students each should pay a moderate fee, if he is able. If not, the Government should pay. — And for the expense thus undertaken, the Legislature should impose a tax,— should add fifteen per cent to the total of the taxes of the Territory. It is the duty of the State, all States.

FATHER GABRIEL That is magnificent!

REV. JOHN MONTEITH It is inspiring!

FATHER GABRIEL But how will this affect the elementary work, the teaching of the children and those who cannot even read?

CHIEF JUSTICE You two shall build this institution as you two deem best,—you two who have toiled, and know these people and their hard conditions, you two who have given yourselves to Michigan. Backed by the Government, you shall in this institution work out the idea of education for Michigan and reach down from above to help the children and illiterate.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH The law will give responsibility, but will give us power as well.

FATHER GABRIEL The day is dawning over Michigan! Education will be its sun. It will reach every family, yes, every clearing in the territory.

The Chief Justice stands absorbed in musing as the two Teachers glow with the encouragement he has given them by his faith in them.

CHIEF JUSTICE Hm. — Hm! — — Catholepistemiad! — — Hm, — yes.

FATHER GABRIEL What? What is that?

CHIEF JUSTICE The name for the institution. Catholepistemiad.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH But do you think—

CHIEF JUSTICE Yes. I do. That shall be the name. It shall be inserted in the bill.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Would it not be far better to call it a university? That expresses a large idea. The University—

CHIEF JUSTICE It would not be better. Be not afraid to start out something new. Universities are old. There never has before been a Catholepistemiad. With that name will your hands be free to do as you deem best. New names drag no old precedents behind them. The Catholepistemiad of Michigan! it is a sounding name!—

Father Gabriel and Mr. Monteith look dismayed but they recognize the fact that nothing they may say will have any effect upon the Chief Justice. Indeed he has already dismissed the matter of the name from his mind.

CHIEF JUSTICE One thing remains to be done to ensure the immediate passage of this bill through the Legislature, —secure the interest of the Governor.

FATHER GABRIEL General Cass. He will endorse the plan.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH The Governor? Lewis Cass?

CHIEF JUSTICE The Governor of the Territory of Michigan.

Governor Cass comes in from the south. He stops as he enters and throws back as to an orderly his riding gauntlets and riding whip, as if he had come on horseback. The people cheer and make way for him and then come up a little closer. The three bow to him.

CHIEF JUSTICE Governor!

GOVERNOR CASS Well, Judge, I am glad to see you, sir! —I trust you are well, Father Gabriel? Mr. Monteith!

CHIEF JUSTICE General Cass. We have drawn up a bill to be enacted by the Legislature providing for a comprehensive scheme of education for the whole of Michigan.

GOVERNOR CASS A practical and well-digested system which should extend to all the advantages of education would be of inestimable value to this young and growing community.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Such is our belief.

GOVERNOR CASS A more acceptable service could not be rendered to our fellow-citizens.

CHIEF JUSTICE This educational system should be supported and maintained by taxes. We want your support and your influence in favor of this provision.

FATHER GABRIEL Both as Governor and as an individual, as a man, we want you interested in it.

GOVERNOR CASS Of all purposes to which a revenue derived from the people can be applied under a government emanating from the people, there is none more interesting in itself nor more important in its effects than the maintenance of a public and general system of education.

CHIEF JUSTICE I propose that whenever that schedule for the taxes of the Territory of Michigan has been drawn, there shall then be added 15% of the total, whatever it may be, for the support of this plan.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH This may seem to be a large amount, but—

GOVERNOR CASS My democracy is not limited to politics. It extends to learning. Education is necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind. The percentage of illiteracy in the territory is very large at present, but established now on a broad and generous basis the educational system of Michigan may well become the model for the newer States of the West. Yes, it appears to me that a plan may be devised which will not press too heavily upon the means of the people.

CHIEF JUSTICE Here is the draft of the bill.

REV. JOHN MONTEITH Judge Woodward has himself drawn its terms, so it should stand the scrutiny of the Courts.

GOVERNOR CASS Yes,—yes indeed. It will certainly endure any litigation to which it may be subjected. -- Hm. — (He reads) — But what is this? — Cathol — epi — stemiad? What on earth is that, Judge? What is that?

CHIEF JUSTICE Catholepistemiad? That is the name of the crowning institution provided for by law.

GOVERNOR CASS That will not stand! And here are more! Epistemia?

CHIEF JUSTICE Epistemia; yes sir. This institution will be new; its methods will be new; its principles new and sound. Wherefore you will acknowledge that its names must be new, or there will be confusion with the old. For you will agree that an injudicious and confused use of words produces want of precision, and sometimes insuperable ambiguity. It greatly retards advance. Therefore in our Catholepistemiad, Knowledge and Science become Epistemia; Literature becomes Anthropoglossia, History Diegetica, and so forth. True it is that he who in the attempt to enlarge the boundaries of Knowledge commits an error is consigned to ridicule, but the innovations in nomenclature attempted by a visionary and fanciful projector are to be carefully distinguished from those innovations which spring from a just and feeling sense of the imperfection and inadequacy of current terms. It is in vain that the easy and indolent mind inveighs against all innovation in language. The virtue and good sense of mankind generally reward those who successfully persevere in enlightening them.

FATHER GABRIEL It will be useless for us to object to the Judge's names. We will but class ourselves among the indolent and easy minds and have against us all the power, ability and influence that now is with us. (They laugh).

CHIEF JUSTICE You will come to see that I am right.

GOVERNOR CASS Unheard of names like these cannot last many years.

CHIEF JUSTICE You will hear these names in Michigan a hundred years from now, and more than a hundred!

GOVERNOR CASS We are approaching debatable land, into which we need not enter. The plan you have here is essentially inspiring, and points toward the future, a noble future, which already the past and present shadow forth. How wonderful are the destinies committed to that future!

How vast are our own interests which are involved in it!  
Let us go on to meet it!

The Band plays. Governor Cass suggests by a motion of his hands that they all go on together. One of the soldiers hands him his riding whip and gauntlets. He takes them and turns. Father Gabriel and the Rev. John Monteith raise their hands in blessing over the people around them. Governor Cass leading, followed by the Chief Justice and a little behind them, Mr. Monteith and Father Gabriel Richard, they go up the stairway to the Ideal level. There they bow low before the State of Michigan seated on the dais. She acknowledges their homage and signs to them to stand near her on the steps. About half of the people of 1817 go out and others gradually come in, dressed in the apparel of 1837, through the entrances on the Historic level.

---

#### 1837: FOUNDATION

The people on the Historic stage are gathered in groups talking with each other. They serve as human background at first rather than as part of the action. From the north come the Rev. John D. Pierce and Gen. Isaac E. Crary. Both are live intelligent men. Gen. Crary is dressed simply but distinctively as a gentleman of the time. The Rev. John D. Pierce is dressed somewhat as a circuit-rider; he is a Congregational missionary. He is large in person, hearty in manner, but he has about him something instinctively modest, something almost impersonal in his way of thinking. He carries in his hand a book.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Gen. Crary, that is a point we ought to adopt here in Michigan, put it in the Constitution, that Education ought to be incorporated as an equal and independent part of the State Government. This is a great book; it is a great report. It is a mine of suggestion for those who have to plan and build up an educational system. The name of this Frenchman, Victor Cousin, should be known throughout the world. It will be.

GEN. CRARY And, my friend, the name of John D. Pierce will be known for generations too, as surely as the State of Michigan builds her system of education on the right foundations.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE (Shaking his head with a depreciatory smile) No. Do not misunderstand me,—

GEN. CRARY I do not.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I have nothing to do with this.

GEN. CRARY You should have much to do with it.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I am a missionary riding through the wilderness of Michigan, simply doing what I can for the people to make them finer and nobler men and women and Michigan a finer and nobler state. I am interested in all this educational question, as in all other questions that affect the future of the State, but that is all. Others know far more than I about it,—and *chiefly* this man, Victor Cousin; he has the foundation principles packed tight in this little book. I carry it with me in my saddlebags, read it wherever I may be at night and ponder on his ideas as I travel over the corduroy roads in the stage coach or in the lumber wagons or on my horse.

GEN. CRARY In rain and mud and frost and storm.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE For these ideas are fundamental.

GEN. CRARY They are.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Unless Education holds an equal place with the other departments in the Government, it will be slighted. Unless the citizens are thoroughly educated, they will not be intelligent, and if they be not keenly intelligent, democracy must fail. This is the most important factor in the future of the State. The Constitution ought to provide for an officer who should have this whole matter in charge and thus keep its importance perpetually before the public mind.

GEN. CRARY I think that will be arranged. I say it as a member of the Constitutional Convention. And a first rate man (smiling) will be appointed to the place.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE You think so?

GEN. CRARY I think so. It has been intimated to me that I am slated for the Chairmanship of the Committee on Education. If I am, I shall draw up an article providing for it, I shall do my utmost to see that it is adopted, that

it becomes a part of the Constitution of the State of Michigan and the law of the land. *And then* I shall do my best to see that the right man is appointed to the place.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Ah!—That is a great relief. I am sure you will accomplish it. For that is indeed fundamental. That is the first thing. Next,—

GEN. CRARY Yes?

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Education must be financially independent here in Michigan. It must receive support in taxes, certainly, but more than that—

GEN. CRARY The sixteenth section of the Government lands. Yes. They must go to the State instead of to the townships by the Act of Congress admitting Michigan to be a State. That is of crucial importance. Governor Mason will be specially interested in that and give us his enthusiastic support in managing it.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I have never met him. I know he is able,—but such a boy for that position. Appointed Secretary of the Territory before he was twenty-one; now only twenty-six and Acting Governor; and like to be the first elected Governor of the State. Think of him—young Stevens Thomson Mason—Governor of Michigan.

GEN. CRARY Yes, he is sure to be elected,—especially if President Jackson removes him for his attitude in the Toledo matter. Andrew Jackson loves that boy, but finds him troublesome, for Michigan is the toy of politics at Washington and Mason stands up for the rights of Michigan. General Jackson calls him the Hotspur Governor, a good name for him, and no less is Andrew Jackson a Henry Bolingbroke. Gen. Cass sent him a warning, saying “You know the President’s views. They remain the same. Avoid all collision.” But Mason’s stand is resolute.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Some say he will not take advice.

GEN. CRARY On the contrary he always seeks it. But he makes his own decisions. He *is* a boy, a real boy,—but make no mistake, he is a great man in his youth.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I should like to see him, to know him.

GEN. CRARY You shall. (With a smile) I shall attend to it.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I am sure that I should love him.

GEN. CRARY You will. All do, even his enemies.

Cheers break out from the groups at the back of the stage near the entrance from the south. The people there turn to greet someone who is coming in that direction. The cheering spreads in waves across the stage until all are centering their enthusiastic attention at that point.

THE CROWD Hurrah for the Governor! Hurrah, hurrah, hurrah!!!

The Acting Governor of the Territory, Stevens Thomson Mason, swings in at a rapid walk, accompanied by his young sister, Miss Emily Virginia Mason. The young Governor enjoys the ovation very much and frankly shows that he does, but always with a fine erect dignity. He might be described as the exuberant personification of dignity. So too Miss Emily enjoys the greeting as much as her brother, maybe on account of her affectionate pride in him even more. They are both laughing, and come forward bowing and smiling to every one around them. With them is another young man, though older than the Governor, Charles B. Whipple, attending in courtly friendliness on Miss Mason, evidently a close friend of the family; and a few other young people.

GOVERNOR MASON O-oh! I am delighted to see you, Gen. Crary!

GEN. CRARY How do you do, Governor? I trust we may long call you by that title.

GOVERNOR MASON Thank you! I should like it. Emily, —Gen. Crary.

Gen. Crary removing his hat makes a sweeping bow to Miss Mason, and she acknowledges it with a low curtsy. Mr. Whipple removes his hat.

MISS MASON It is a pleasure to see you again, Gen. Crary.

Gen. Crary and Mr. Whipple bow to each other.

GEN. CRARY And Governor, this is Mr. Pierce, the Rev. John D. Pierce, of Marshall. I spoke to you about him not long ago.

GOVERNOR MASON I have been wanting to meet you, Mr. Pierce.

The Governor holds out his hand cordially to Mr. Pierce and shakes hands with him.

GOVERNOR MASON I understand that you and Gen. Crary have a log-up on the hill there at Marshall where you go and discuss the affairs of Michigan.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Yes, I have had the pleasure and privilege of having Gen. Crary as an inmate of my house at Marshall for a year or two, and we often walk up there on the hill to that log and talk about the principles deemed important, by us, for the foundations of the State. I might add that the subject of education has been a theme of especial interest to us.

GOVERNOR MASON I should like to join you there sometime.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE We should like to have you.

GOVERNOR MASON I should enjoy nothing better. Emily! Excuse me, Emily, let me present to you Mr. Pierce of Marshall. You remember.—

MISS MASON Of course I do. He's the one that travels all through the peninsulas going to the settlers and farmers back in the clearings. I am so glad to meet you, Mr. Pierce.

GOVERNOR MASON Mr. Pierce, Gen. Crary has told me a good deal about your discussions on the educational development of Michigan. I agree with you and Gen. Crary that education should be made a distinct department of the government and that its direction should be centered in one man. I told Gen. Crary that I should like to see you. I want to discuss these matters with you fully, for I have about made up my mind that you are the man to

appoint as the first Superintendent of Public Instruction of Michigan.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Why, Governor,—I have often counseled with Mr. Crary about the best interests of our new State, but I have not thought of ever occupying such a position, being constantly employed in the work of a missionary of the American Home Missionary Society.

GOVERNOR MASON (laughing) I will not listen to objections. This is a matter of public duty.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE But Governor, while I am deeply interested in these questions, I am by no means an authority on them.

GOVERNOR MASON As good an authority as we have in Michigan. Besides, as I said when General Jackson appointed me Secretary of the Territory and many protested on account of my youth, Is there any difficulty in getting the advice of wiser and abler men? (He laughs at the dilemma he has put Mr. Pierce into.)

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE Well, I should wish to do just that. I should wish to go east to get information and to discuss these questions with the leaders there.

GOVERNOR MASON You shall. I will arrange for it. The whole subject will be committed to your hands, and I assure you of my support. I shall rely on your wisdom, for I feel, sir, that you are a man of rare judgment and of a well-stored mind. And what is of very great importance, you know the people of Michigan, men and women and children, citizens and farmers, Americans and Canadians, through and through, for you have been their friend. Ha! There are some old friends of mine! Well, Jim! and Fred! That is your name isn't it?

FRED BALDWIN Yes, sir.

Two boys of about fourteen years of age stand grinning but embarrassed among the people gathered together at a respectful distance.

GOVERNOR MASON Come up and speak to me. You do not mind my being Governor, do you?

JIM PORTER No, sir.

They both come up and shake hands with the Governor.

BOTH BOYS How do you do, sir?

GOVERNOR MASON Good fun we had that day just the same, didn't we!

BOTH BOYS Yes, sir. (They laugh, a little more at ease.)

GOVERNOR MASON Emily, these are two of the boys I was coasting with that day last winter when I ran into the Canuck!

MISS MASON Are you the boys?

BOTH BOYS We were there.

MISS MASON What fun!

GOVERNOR MASON (to Mr. Pierce, Gen. Crary and the others, who all come up closer.) I happened to be down on the river bluff one day last winter and there were a lot of boys coasting down there. It was fine; the snow was packed down hard, like glare ice. I told some boys that had a double runner, bob-sleds you know, that I wanted to go down with them. There were four or five of you, weren't there? These were two of them.

JIM PORTER Yes, sir. There was Sam Meigs and Bill Jones and Freckles Nesbit and Fred here and me. And you made six.

GOVERNOR MASON And they let me steer. It was simply fine! We went like a shot out of a turkey rifle. But there was a French huckster coming along the road at the bottom, a big Canadian with his wife and a load of all kinds of stuff he was bringing to town. Well, I did not see him and he did not see us. There was no time for anybody to see anything, in fact. And on I went straight into him, struck him square, broke his pung all up and scattered everything all over the place. No one was hurt, fortunately.

FRED BALDWIN But he, the Canuck—

GOVERNOR MASON Yes, he was pretty mad at first, wasn't he!

BAPTISTE DUFRESNE But, Your Excellency, I not know you was the Governor; I not know, me, when I do that.

A big French Canadian farmer stands forward, his knit cap in hand, bowing respectfully and apologetically, yet grinning all the time, his little wife curtsying with him all the time.

GOVERNOR MASON Well, here he is himself! Comment vous portez-vous, mon vieux? We had not a moment to pick ourselves up when Baptiste strides in among us, grabs me by the collar and the pantaloons and heaves me into the big snowdrift! Ha-ha-ha!!

BAPTISTE DUFRESNE But I not know, me, c'était le Gouverneur, or I would not have done like so, no.

GOVERNOR MASON That was all right, Baptiste. If I had been in your place, I should have done the same thing to you,—if I had been able. (All laugh, as the Canuck is much larger than the Governor in every way.) They got you a new pung, didn't they? A good one?

BAPTISTE DUFRESNE Oui-oui-oui-oui, Your Excellence. It is a great honor to Bateese, and bring me good business. For why? I tell every one that is the Governor's pung, and they all want to buy out of it.

GOVERNOR MASON (to the boys) Well, we must do the whole thing all over again the first day of good coasting next winter! Shall we boys? Will you let me steer again?

BOTH BOYS Yes, sir.

BAPTISTE DUFRESNE But I not throw you in the snow dreeft, no. You run in me all you like, oui-oui, yes.

GOVERNOR MASON (to Rev. John D. Pierce and Gen. Crary). This good French farmer,—Michigan ought to afford him good schooling for those children of his. And he ought not have to pay for it. They are for the future citizens of the State. Let Baptiste support his family, but let the State educate them! Taxes, yes, but—

GEN. CRARY The sixteenth section of every township, Governor.

GOVERNOR MASON Yes, those sixteenth sections must not go to the townships or they will be squandered. They must go to the State itself.

GEN. CRARY I will manage that. And no one will ever know the difference.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE But how will that be?

GOVERNOR MASON I guess we can trust Gen. Crary to put that through.

GEN. CRARY In drafting the ordinance admitting the State I will see to it that that section is so worded that these school lands will really be conveyed to the State. The change will not be noticed.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE But surely there should be no deception about it.

GEN. CRARY Oh no; no indeed. It will be clearly stated in the bill. The ordinance will speak for itself. Every Senator and Congressman will have the bill before him to read. If it were perceived Congress would probably give the land to the townships from habit.

GOVERNOR MASON (nodding approval) It will be all important for us as a State and set us free to lay the foundations of education in Michigan aright. That must be ensured.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE If that passes, the State will have over a million acres of land for education here in Michigan. An enterprise so magnificent as the education of a whole people to be successful must rest upon a firm basis.

GOVERNOR MASON Exactly. Every free Government is called upon by a principle of self government to afford every facility for the education of the people. The liberty of a people cannot be forced beyond their intelligence. If Michigan is to remain where she now stands with her glory undimmed, it is our imperious duty to educate every child in the State by a liberal and uniform system of common schools.

GEN. CRARY With the ample endowment of these public lands, Michigan can lay her foundation right.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE With this as a basis it will be easy to raise the superstructure of a first rate school system. It will be my purpose from the beginning to make all our schools free, free from all charges, free from rate bills, free from tuition bills. I assume that the property of the State should be holden for the education of every child in it.

GOVERNOR MASON That is the fundamental principle. Education cemented by adequate financing is the single foundation of freedom in a State.

A gentleman comes up to Miss Mason with a packet of letters and a bouquet of flowers. With proper salutations he offers the letters to her.

MR. McMILLAN Miss Mason, I called at the Mansion and was told that unless you had gone horseback riding, I should find you here. A packet of letters had just arrived from the east and I offered to bring them to you.

MISS MASON Thank you, Mr. McMillan; it was so good of you.

She glances over the letters, quickly picks one out, then several others, and goes over to her brother.

MISS MASON Oh, Thomson! Excuse me, brother dear, here are some letters for you, and here is a letter from Mother just come by post from New York.

She hands him a packet of letters. She opens and reads the letter she first picked out.

GOVERNOR MASON Yes? What does she say? Is Father back from Arkansas and Texas safely?

MISS MASON Yes, just back.

Mr. McMillan approaches her again and holds out the bouquet of flowers to her.

MR. McMILLAN Miss Mason, would you do me the great honor graciously to accept this bouquet?

MISS MASON Oh, Mr. McMillan! For *me*? How perfectly lovely they are! (She starts to take them and then draws back.) But you know the rule, Mr. McMillan. Are these from Father Kundig's gardens at the Poorhouse? All bouquets must come from there.

MR. McMILLAN Why, I crave your pardon just this time, Miss Mason, but—

MISS MASON Oh, Mr. McMillan, what shall I say to you? How will good old Father Kundig care for his poor unless we buy his flowers? Yet they are beautiful and it would be hard to refuse them,—as you deserve.

MR. WHIPPLE That is right, Emily, hold him strictly to the law. If your decrees are to be flouted in that way, what will become of us? Now I have here a bouquet which I will swear came from Father Kundig's gardens—(offering a bouquet).

MISS MASON But *did* they?—Charles! (They laugh) I will reserve decision. Meantime—

MR. McMILLAN Take mine.

MR. WHIPPLE. Accept mine.

MISS MASON I will accept neither—just yet. Hold them for me and let me read my letter from Mother. — — — Oh, Thomson, what do you think! Miss Martineau is coming!

MR. McMILLAN What? Who is that? I ask with unswerving loyalty to you.

MISS MASON Miss Harriet Martineau; she is from London.

MR. WHIPPLE She is a distinguished English author, is she not?

GOVERNOR MASON She is. I have been daily standing in dread of Miss Martineau's arrival. I am afraid she is a very learned young lady and does not dance. She is traveling in America. Mother met her in New York and invited her to take up her quarters with us during her stay in Michigan. I wish her no harm, but I still pray heaven she may never arrive.

MISS MASON Thomson! Aren't you ashamed of yourself!

I am sure Miss Martineau is a very charming young lady and expresses very beautiful sentiments. Mother says that Miss Martineau wrote her that she had passed through Michigan going out to Chicago and that Milton must have traveled in Michigan before he wrote the garden parts of *Paradise Lost*.

GOVERNOR MASON A very pretty sentiment! But imagine Miss Martineau amongst us with our present household! You are a most delightful hostess, dear sister, but it would have to be a quiet house party with Mother away. It would not be much fun. Again I ask, Does she dance? Does Mother say? No, I fear there is no relief to be hoped for from our present apprehension. Everybody about the house trembles at noise of a steamboat, lest it is bringing Miss —

MISS MASON *Thomson!*

GOVERNOR MASON You know they do. Even the old gobbler in the yard seems frightened, for the knock of Miss Martineau at the door of our mansion is the knell of his departure to the place from which good turkeys never return. If a master's hopes and a gobbler's prayers will avail anything, heaven will send adverse winds to meet the vessel that bears Miss Martineau toward us.

MISS MASON Thomson, I wish you would please—use fewer words. (To the others) I am always saying to Thomson use fewer words. (She reads) Oh-h-h! Joy!! Mother says that she and Father are coming and will be here before Miss Martineau comes.

GOVERNOR MASON Oh, well then, that is all right! That is the end of the gobbler though! Farewell, old Falstaff, I could better spare a better turkey! But does she dance? Quadrille? Schottische? Virginia Reel?

MR. WHIPPLE They call it the Sir Roger de Coverley in England; it is the same but they dance it much slower.

GOVERNOR MASON Then we will show her how to make it swing! And if she does not know already, we will teach her how to dance! You will come, won't you, Mr. Mc-

Millan, and stay the whole time through; and you of course, Charles.

MR. McMILLAN But we are out of favor! —

They stand in pretended dejection with the unaccepted bouquets of flowers in their hands. Miss Mason laughs, runs over and takes the bouquets from them.

MISS MASON You are forgiven, both of you. But remember, it must not happen again. Come! Will you? Will you?

BOTH We certainly will.

MISS MASON *And the bouquets you bring Miss Martineau must come from Father Kundig's.*

GOVERNOR MASON And Gen. Crary, you will come to the house party?

GEN. CRARY Thank you, I shall be delighted to stop in, but only for one day and night.

GOVERNOR MASON We can talk politics and settle the affairs of state between dances. Nothing is as good fun as politics, anyway!—And Mr. Pierce, you have never been to one of our house parties at the Mansion. I hope that you can come.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I thank you, Governor, but I shall be in the east.

GOVERNOR MASON The next time then. Our welcome is always ready, but it is best to come when Mother and Father are at home. They have been away so long now. —The East is sending us a steady stream of new settlers, Mr. Pierce.

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE They come from a region of school-houses and are anxious for schools, Governor. They will support us in these plans for education.

GOVERNOR MASON They will make good citizens. Michigan is filling up! Do you know that 90 steamboats arrived in Detroit during a single month, 700 passengers disembarking in one day? In one month, on an average, a wagon left Detroit for the interior every five minutes during the twelve hours of daylight! Most of these people are New England farmers.

Groups of farm people begin to pass through from the south to the north, dressed as emigrants traveling in search of new homes. A group of young men, Charles Whipple and McMillan leading them, sing in jolly spirit, the old song of those days. Governor Mason enjoys and joins in it, as also does Miss Emily. Then the song is repeated with all singing.

Come all ye Yankee farmers who wish to change your lot,  
Who've spunk enough to travel beyond your native spot  
And leave behind the village where Pa and Ma must stay,  
Come follow me and settle in Mich-i-gan-i-a!

Yea, yea, yea, in Michigania!

As the singing closes, Governor Mason stands watching the migrating farmers pass.

GOVERNOR MASON Yes, most of these people are farmers. What can we do, what should Michigan do to make them better farmers? What can we do for my friend, Baptiste Dufresne and his like?

REV. JOHN D. PIERCE I have thought about that too. Sometime Michigan must provide for schools of agriculture. But we cannot do that successfully until the farmers themselves shall take up the matter and demand a real and practical education for the farming life. The question with the statesman is not what he may like to do but what he can do; so with the teacher, it is not what we may wish to accomplish, but how much we *can* accomplish. We shall lay the foundation right in our generation and we will welcome the new population. Soon it will be time for us to pass on and give way to others who will build on our foundations.

GOVERNOR MASON Yes, I too realize that I must be going. I have endeavored to discharge my duty faithfully as a public officer. I have given my whole life to Michigan. I was not twenty-one when I was appointed to office and undertook the responsibilities of public life. There was natural prejudice against me on account of that fact, and I should have shrunk from the undertaking had I not been sustained by the hope that by a determined adherence to the interests of the public whenever committed to my

charge, I should in time remove all preconceived prejudices and ultimately obtain the confidence of my fellow citizens. To accomplish this has been the highest object of my ambition. I feel assured that I have done so, and it affords me the richest reward I could desire. I am ready to go. Shall we go on together? Emily!—

The Music begins playing. Governor Mason turns and points to the stairs leading to the upper level. He goes forward up the stairs toward the south with Gen. Crary and John D. Pierce following closely after him. Miss Mason with Mr. Whipple and Mr. McMillan follow. Then others of the people, some going up the stairs, others out at the back on either side. At the foot of the stairs Miss Mason lingers, her two bouquets of flowers in her hands, and the two young men go on up the stairs to the north. As Governor Mason nears the top of the stairs, he stops and turns back, holding out his hand to his sister.

GOVERNOR MASON Emily! Come, sister.

MISS MASON Not yet. I will follow before very long.

She waves her hand to him and stands at the foot of the stairs watching the changing people around her. Governor Mason approaches the dais, bows very low to Michigan, and then going up the steps of the dais with Governor Cass, he fixes on her wolverine staff the State Flag of Michigan.

---

### 1857: REALIZATION

The Band continues to play. Michigan comes down the steps of the dais holding the State Flag high and stands at the front edge of the upper or Ideal stage. Those on that level stand back in two groups on either side. Education stands a little to the back and left of Michigan. The people on the lower or Historic Stage raise their arms in acclamation to Michigan and crossing over go out on the sides opposite to that where they were. New people come in, who are all farmers with their wives and children of about the year 1857. As they come in they too raise their arms to Michigan and stand in groups below her. A group of five distinguished men come in from the north and stand over at that side with arms upraised. Michigan turns around and attended by Education goes up the stairs of the dais and sits down on the throne. Education stands by her side. The groups of people on the Ideal level draw a little closer to the foot of the steps of the dais.

- J. C. HOLMES The State of Michigan and the Cause of Education are held in loyal affection by her citizens!
- J. R. WILLIAMS And the Farmers of Michigan are ever close to her heart! You and I, Mr. Holmes, express very fine sentiments, but do they? Do the farmers of Michigan care much for the cause of Education?
- W. M. FENTON I am sure, Mr. Williams, they do!
- J. R. WILLIAMS I am glad, Mr. Fenton, you are sure. As Lieutenant-Governor, I am certain you are in position to know. And does Michigan hold the farmers of the State close to her heart, as I have just very prettily said?
- E. H. LOTHROP You certainly were sincere when you said so, I hope, Mr. Williams.
- J. R. WILLIAMS Yes, I was sincere enough, but one can be sincere without speaking the actual truth. If Michigan does hold the farmers close to her heart, why does she not do more for them; why does not she do something specially for them? The two questions are really one, for the farmers have a very large majority of representatives in the Legislature. *Do they want education? Do they want agricultural education?* It is all very well to live in the ideal, but the future of the agriculture of Michigan, and that is the future of Michigan, is as a matter of plain fact in the hands of the farmers of Michigan,—of these people right here.
- W. M. FENTON (Turning to farmers in the group near them) You, sir, how many sons have you?
- FARMER NO. 1 I have three boys; and likely lads they are, I'll say that for them.
- W. M. FENTON You believe in education?
- FARMER NO. 1 Indeed, we do. We send every one of them away to school. We do not want any of them to have to be farmers.
- W. M. FENTON What do you want them to be?
- FARMER NO. 1 Well, one wants to be a doctor; and Sam, he wants to be a lawyer; and the third, Jim, he doesn't exactly know what he wants to be yet, but his Ma and me,

we tells him to hurry up and decide or he'll have to be a farmer.

E. H. LOTHROP Why not educate him to be a farmer?

FARMER NO. 1 How do you mean? You learn farming by just farming. You just kind of have to grow into it. He goes to school three months out of the year, and that's plenty enough if he's going to be a farmer, because he don't learn nothing in school to help him be a farmer of course. But I tells him that if he'll make something of himself, I'll help him, send him away, or anything to give him a chance.

J. R. WILLIAMS There is one fact stated clearly.

W. M. FENTON Yes, it is. Some of our very best farmers endeavor to push their sons into other spheres of life, and into professions to which as like as not they are ill adapted. It is a deep-rooted sentiment with them; it is a morbid public sentiment this attaching too much importance to the arts and professions. It is an evil.

J. C. HOLMES But it is really held by all.

E. H. LOTHROP Four-fifths of the children of our State are intended and will probably pursue agriculture as a profession and as a means of livelihood.

FARMER NO. 2 Most of them have to. We can't all of us, like this man here, send our boys away to learn some other trade or occupation.

E. H. LOTHROP Then I say, let us educate our sons who are intended for agriculture thoroughly in everything that pertains to agriculture and to the business of agriculture. Let us make the common schools what they should be, the nursery of farmers.

FARMER NO. 3 That sounds like something. I always did say it seemed like you ought to be able to learn something about farming.

The Farmers and their wives begin to show interest in what is being said, and draw up to give better attention to the conversation and to take part in it.

FARMER NO. 3 Say, Mr. Lothrop, can they teach farming in the schools, do you think?

E. H. LOTHROP I do.

W. M. FENTON There can be no good reason why agriculture should not be taught in the schools as well as any subject.

BELA HUBBARD There is no occupation to which the truths of science are more applicable and to which they are more valuable than to agriculture. The State Government should have powers in the situation. The Legislature should establish a central agricultural office, and with it an agricultural museum and an agricultural library,—yes, and an agricultural college and a model farm.

FARMER NO. 1 The Legislature would not do all that!

BELA HUBBARD Why not?

FARMER NO. 2 They just wouldn't. (The Farmers laugh, but draw up closer.)

E. H. LOTHROP Our Legislatures are composed four-fifths of farmers. If that great majority of farmers is unable to control legislation so that it shall meet the wants and supply the needs of the people, of the farmers themselves, an impeachment will lie either upon their intelligence or their honesty.

The Farmers laugh at the truth of the point, and draw up closer.

J. R. WILLIAMS If there is any man in the world who should be enlightened, it is the farmer; and that may be taken as meaning both needs to be enlightened and that may be expected to be enlightened. If you farmers could be aroused, you would put it through.

FARMER NO. 3 And that is true too, Mr. Williams. We will.

On the Ideal level Governor Mason and the Rev. John D. Pierce show special interest and come forward to listen to what is going on below on the Historic level.

J. C. HOLMES Will you, farmers of Michigan, support a measure for the proper development of agricultural education in the State?

FARMERS Yes! Aye! That we will. (The response expresses quite a roar of approval.)

J. C. HOLMES Gentlemen, you,—or rather we, for we five are really all farmers too,—we and our fellow-agriculturists throughout the State have the power and the influence to do this if we will.

FARMERS We will. We will see our representatives. We will see that they do it.

J. C. HOLMES We will put this question into a petition to the Legislature and circulate it throughout the State, so that the Legislature will not be merely dealing with memorials from our very respectable Michigan State Society of Agriculture but with the demands direct of their agricultural constituents.

FARMER NO. 3 You need not call it a petition, Mr. Holmes. We won't ask them; we will tell them.

There is a general laugh of approval and of confirmation.

BELA HUBBARD This will be far-reaching in its good effects. It is not merely a matter of schooling. It will establish the agriculture of all Michigan on scientific principles and stimulate the business development of the whole State.

E. H. LOTHROP It will be far-reaching, for it will be improving the tillage of our soils by first improving and cultivating the minds of those who will direct and do the work, the sons of the farmers, the future farmers of Michigan.

The Hon. Francis W. Shearman, Superintendent of Public Instruction, comes in from the north and greets Mr. Lothrop and the other gentlemen.

E. H. LOTHROP How do you do, Mr. Shearman. As Superintendent of Public Instruction you will be interested in the growing demand among the farmers of Michigan for the teaching of agriculture in a comprehensive and practical way in the educational system of the State.

F. W. SHEARMAN I am indeed.

- J. R. WILLIAMS Twenty years ago, at the time that Michigan was admitted as a State to the Union, the proper establishment of agricultural education was contemplated, and Governor Mason and your eminent predecessor, the Rev. John D. Pierce, felt its importance very strongly. But nothing has thus far been done.
- J. C. HOLMES As John D. Pierce said at that time, sometime Michigan must provide for schools of agriculture but it cannot be done successfully until the farmers themselves take up the matter and demand a real and practical education for the farming life.
- E. H. LOTHROP That time has now come. The farmers of Michigan are deeply interested and will find ways to bring their hopes and desires on the subject to the attention of the members of the Legislature.
- F. W. SHEARMAN This is a most auspicious situation.
- J. C. HOLMES I need not add that the Michigan State Agricultural Society is also deeply interested and has for some time been doing all it possibly can to arouse the farmers to their duty in the matter.
- F. W. SHEARMAN Not only am I personally interested but I regard it as a matter of my official duty to do all I can to forward the movement. The establishment of Normal Schools was another measure proposed by Mr. Pierce. That also, like the plans for agricultural education, it was not practicable to bring to realization at that time. But though twenty years have passed, the Normal School has not been forgotten; it is now to be opened. Neither shall agricultural education be forgotten.
- E. H. LOTHROP We feel that the Legislature must give it effective attention now.
- F. W. SHEARMAN It has. In the Act for the Normal School it is provided that the Normal School shall give instruction in the mechanic arts, and in the arts of husbandry and agricultural chemistry. You will see, Mr. Holmes, that these provisions made by the law are identical with the objects and the interests of your Society, in

which you have taken so deep and laudable concern. I trust we can work together,—you and the Michigan State Agricultural Society, I and the office of the Superintendent of Public Instruction.

From the north comes President Henry P. Tappan of the University of Michigan. All greet him cordially, but Mr. Shearman shows a little private dissatisfaction at his coming, although necessarily being very courteous to him.

**E. H. LOTHROP** We are discussing, President Tappan, the institution of agricultural education for the farmers of Michigan.

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** The very matter I am interested in. Forty years ago, when the charter of the University of Michigan was drawn by that eminent jurist, Chief Justice Woodward, this matter had his most serious attention.

Chief Justice Woodward, on the upper level, has been following all that went on below on the Historic level, but at this reference to his work he evinces much greater interest and goes forward to the front of the upper level and gives close attention to what is said.

**F. W. SHEARMAN** I was just calling the attention of these gentlemen of the Michigan State Agricultural Society to the fact that in the recent law establishing the Normal School provision is already made for the teaching of the arts if the Superintendent of Public Instruction would deem it a matter of duty to give active cooperation.

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** Of course one of the most important features of education in Michigan, one which gives its educational system a commanding position in America, is the way everything is centralized here, with the University of Michigan at the head, as it should be and as was contemplated in the earliest plans of Chief Justice Woodward forty years ago. In its function the University has always had your hearty cooperation as it has had of your eminent predecessors, Mr. Shearman.

**F. W. SHEARMAN** But in this instance, it is felt that the Normal School, under the Act of the Legislature—

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** But you are aware that the new *Constitution* has indicated the University as the proper institution to direct the agricultural work.

Chief Justice Woodward becomes emphatic in his advocacy of President Tappan's claims. He crosses over from the south to the north of the Ideal level and joins Governor Mason and John D. Pierce, urging upon them the merits and demerits of the various points made as the argument goes on below.

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** The Constitution empowers the Legislature specifically to appropriate the 22 sections of salt spring lands for the maintenance of an Agricultural School, which it specifically says it may make a branch of the University. Therefore in anticipation of this legislative grant, the University has organized an Agricultural School as a part of its scientific course, and knowing full well, Mr. Holmes, that everything connected with the progress of agricultural science must prove interesting both to yourself individually and to the Michigan State Agricultural Society, I take this opportunity of laying before you some measures which have been adopted by the Regents and Faculty of the University in relation to this Agricultural School.

The Farmers have all of them been listening intently and while characteristically not joining in the discussion have been making private comments to each other showing decided personal opinions.

**J. R. WILLIAMS** The Legislature must decide, and the farmers themselves will by their representatives have a voice in the decision.

**FARMER NO. 1** It appears to me, if I might say a word, that neither the University nor the Office of the Superintendent of Public Instruction nor the Normal School showed much interest in agricultural education until it looked like there was some public lands to be appropriated.

**F. W. SHEARMAN** I assure you, that from my official position, I cannot be other than impartial in the decision of this question.

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** Having no property interest in this State, I certainly may claim to be free from all sectional and local jealousy in the matter.

**FARMER NO. 3** Nobody thinks you have any local jealousy in the matter, Mr. Tappan. Seeing the University and the Normal School is located there within ten miles of each other, it would seem that whichever got it, both would be satisfied. But it does not seem that ye both are.

**FARMER NO. 2** Well, why not let some other part of the State have this? Have the Agricultural School separate! Why not?

There is evidence of marked approval of this among the farmers.

**BELA HUBBARD** There are good reasons from the scientific standpoint for uniting all such work, and agriculture is a science, in one institution, the University.

**FARMER NO. 1** I'll not say but there are. It might be all right to have it at the University, but I don't know.

**FARMER NO. 2.** Why mix the different kinds of teaching? If my boy's going to learn to be a farmer, I don't see 's it will help him any, when he has to be out ploughing in the hot sun, to see some other boy sitting in a cool window reading a book.

**E. H. LOTHROP** Now, as to having the agriculture in connection with the Normal School, the Legislature has—

**FARMER NO. 3** Well, the Legislature might change its mind. It has before this.

Evident disapproval of having the agricultural work at the Normal School. Mr. Shearman recognizes the fact.

**J. R. WILLIAMS** It is evident that the prevailing opinion of the farmers themselves is that an Agricultural School should not be attached to the Normal School.

**FARMERS** That's right. No need of having it at the Normal School.

**FARMER NO. 2** If my boy went to the Agricultural School to save time getting to be a farmer and some likely girl

went to the Normal School to learn to be a teacher, it appears to me they might neither of them learn what they went there for and certainly would not save time at it. Better let them do their courting afterward. Keep the farm school away from the Normal.

All laugh and express their emphatic approval of this practical statement. There is no longer a possibility of the Normal School gaining the support of the farmers.

J. C. HOLMES I believe, President Tappan, most of the farmers would prefer having the agricultural school separate, that it should not be established in immediate proximity to any other educational institution.

FARMERS That's right! Certainly. Sure, that's the right idea.

J. C. HOLMES But the farmers of Michigan think highly of their University and I am sure they would like to hear you speak on the question. Am I right?

FARMERS Yes, sure. We'll hear him. We always like to hear a good speech.

J. C. HOLMES Then sit down and President Tappan will talk to us.

The farmers, their wives and children all sit down on the ground in groups and prepare to listen to a speech. President Tappan steps forward to address them, and all join in hearty applause. He is facing them across the stage, in profile to the audience.

PRESIDENT TAPPAN I thank you, my friends, and Mr. Holmes and members of the Michigan State Agricultural Society for this opportunity to speak to you on this question. It is an important question and I want you to realize the attitude of the University of Michigan toward it. I wish to say, Farmers of Michigan, that our great desire at Ann Arbor is to make the University useful to you, and we are determined to do it. We will educate your sons who wish to be educated for the different professions. We will educate those who wish to take a particular course to fit them for a particular business. We will educate

those who wish to become strictly literary and scientific men. And beyond all this, we have established and will carry on, an Agricultural Department for those who intend to devote themselves particularly to Agriculture. We shall do this independently of any consideration as to the disposition of the lands appropriated by the State for Agricultural education. Our aim is to make the University one of the first in our country, and, if we can, second to none in the world; and therefore, there is no branch of knowledge that we can lawfully omit.

My judgment is, therefore, that it is better to have one great institution than half a dozen small ones. An agricultural department belongs to the University. We already have the apparatus, the books, and the Professor for this course of instruction. Why then begin an entirely new institution? It is impossible to conceive of any benefit in separating, while manifold and apparent are the benefits to be derived from concentration.

Lively interest is shown by the farmer audience as each one pays closest attention. On the Ideal level, President Tappan is clearly the heroic spokesman of the Truth for Chief Justice Woodward. Governor Mason, the Rev. John D. Pierce and now also Governor Cass listen a little amused and realizing the sure trend of farmer opinion.

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** In closing I want to invite you farmers of Michigan and members of the Michigan State Agricultural Society to appoint a committee to visit the University at Ann Arbor and see for yourselves what we are already doing for agriculture and for agricultural science. And I am sure that the Superintendent of Public Instruction will extend a similar invitation to you to visit the Normal School at Ypsilanti.

**F. W. SHEARMAN** I certainly do, and hope you will come at the earliest possible date.

**PRESIDENT TAPPAN** And then your committee can report to you its recommendations for such action as you may be pleased to take.

There is hearty applause and sincere appreciation expressed as President Tappan steps back. Mr. Holmes stands forward as presiding over the meeting.

FARMER NO. 1 That was a fine speech. He knows how to talk.

FARMER NO. 2 He does that. You can see he's learned how. He's an orator.

FARMER NO. 3 Mr. Chairman, or leastways, Mr. Holmes, I do not know how to put this, but here's the idea. I move that we thank Mr. Tappan for his elegant speech and we accept his invitation to entertain a committee at the University and to show them around,—and we thank him; and we want a committee appointed to write up a paper for the Legislature saying we want them to appropriate some money for a good agricultural school for Michigan, and a farm; and we want that agricultural school should be entirely separate from any other educational institution.

FARMERS That's right. I second it.

J. C. HOLMES You have heard the motion.

FARMERS Aye! Aye! That's right. That's what I want.

J. C. HOLMES President Tappan, you have our grateful appreciation for addressing us upon this important question.

PRESIDENT TAPPAN It is clear that the minds of the farmers of Michigan are made up on this question. They have decided. I recognize that much may be gained for the best development of agricultural education by the institution being free and I trust that the unity which may be lost will be gained by a lasting harmony between the University of Michigan and the Michigan Agricultural School or College.

There is a stir among the farmers. Many get up and begin to clap their hands as the Governor of Michigan, the Hon. Kinsley S. Bingham, comes in attended by several officials. The group rearranges itself about him.

J. C. HOLMES The Governor!

Hearty cheers. Mr. Holmes motions to them all to sit down again. They do so.

**GOVERNOR BINGHAM** Fellow citizens! Your patriotic devotion to the welfare of your State, your interest in education and in the best development of agriculture bring the immediate attention of the Legislature and the whole State Government. Your expressed demand for the establishment of a Michigan Agricultural College, separate from any other educational institution, will soon be enacted into law.

Loud and continued applause.

**GOVERNOR BINGHAM** The proper authorities are considering what action to take in this important matter, and whom to appoint as President and as the first Professors of the College. I am able to say that the President of the Michigan Agricultural College will be the Hon. Joseph R. Williams of Constantine; and the first Professors will be: Calvin Tracy, Mathematics; Lewis Ransom Fisk, Chemistry; Henry Goadby, Animal and Vegetable Physiology and Entomology; Robert Dodd Weeks, Secretary and English Literature; John G. Holmes, Horticulture.

As each is named, he comes forward. The Faculty stands together in a group. Loud applause breaks out as each one is named.

**GOVERNOR BINGHAM** I wish now to ask you, Farmers of Michigan, how many students there will be at the opening of this College? Please stand forward. Come together here with your Teachers.

The farmers and their wives push forward a number of their sons, who come together in the center behind the President and Faculty.

**GOVERNOR BINGHAM** I will ask President Williams to address you.

**PRESIDENT WILLIAMS** My Fellow Citizens! It is a self evident proposition that no appropriation can be so far-reaching and so vital even to the material prosperity of

new communities and so prolific of incalculable results, as donations for education. Let us hope therefore that in due time the National and the State Governments will amply endow this and similar institutions and relieve the people of Michigan from every duty but a benignant guardianship. A very small tax will bring almost incredible results. Two cents per annum, for each inhabitant, embracing the next ten years, would probably cover the required appropriations for the College. It would not amount to six kernels of corn per day. If an Institution should perish from such a consideration, the wisdom of the people would degenerate to an unthinkable level. The adoption of a permanent policy requires a stable and reliant support, that will carry it through adversity, regardless alike of the frowns or smiles of indifference, ignorance, or malice.

Friends and enemies alike will demand too much, and that too early. The acorn we bury today will not branch out into a majestic oak tomorrow. The orchard we plant this year will not afford a harvest fruit the next. The Institution itself, like the seeds, the plants, the trees, the breeds, the very implements which come under its ordeal, requires patience, wisdom, time, for trial and development.

I have little fear of ultimate failure. If one Institution of this kind should languish, the indications are numerous that the auspicious moment will arrive when success will be achieved. Where a great need is felt and appreciated simultaneously over a great country, it is merely a question of time, when it shall be successfully met. But there must be a tolerant and hearty co-operation of the people of the State and its functionaries, of the successive students, and of the officers of government and instruction, to whom so sacred a trust is confided. On the great voyage of human progress the channel is strewn with wrecks, which serve as beacons to warn succeeding voyagers from the shoals on every side.

As to this youthful State belongs the honor of estab-

lishing the pioneer State Institution of the kind, and initiating what may prove one of the significant movements of the age, may she enjoy the glory of its complete and ultimate triumph!

With the liveliest anticipations, and highest hopes of success, we welcome the MICHIGAN AGRICULTURAL COLLEGE among the institutions of learning of the State of Michigan, and bid it God speed. Long may it flourish, an honor to its founders, and an honor to the State, and a tribute of allegiance to our common country, America.

The Band plays a series of fanfares in progressive keys based on the first notes of The Star Spangled Banner. All the people on the Historic Stage rise. Miss Emily Mason has been standing back in the entrance of the stairs to the Ideal level. She runs up the stairs. At the top, she turns and calls "Thomson! Brother!" and runs across to him. He calls out to her, "Emily!" and reaches out his arms to her. They stand together with the others of their group as Michigan attended by Education comes down the stairs of the dais and turns toward the southern entrance on the Ideal level. The Band breaks out sforzando in The Star Spangled Banner. Through the southern entrance comes America, in white with golden girdle, carrying her shield and the Stars and Stripes. Michigan and all the others bow low as she advances. She comes forward and all those on the Historic level acclaim her with outstretched arms. She then goes up the stairs and takes her place in front of the throne on the dais. Michigan and Education stand a little below and on either side of her.

The Star Spangled Banner comes to a close and the Band immediately plays on into a march, The Pioneers of Michigan. Led by the President, Faculty and Students of the new Michigan Agricultural College, all the people on the Historic level go up the stairways leading to the Ideal level, using both stairways. As they reach the top they salute America, Michigan and Education with outstretched arms and so with arms raised go out the two entrances. The people of the other scenes, all except the principal characters, who are on the upper level, come in below at the Historic entrances, follow up stairs and out at the upper entrances, in reverse order, the British, French and Indians last of all. Then America, Michigan and Education come down the steps of the dais, and followed by the principal characters of the scenes pass quickly out, as the Band closes with a strong fortissimo statement of the theme of the Pioneers of Michigan.

## AN EARLY VISITOR TO MICHIGAN

BY ~~VELERA-KELLER~~  
Graydon Sallomstall  
CHARLEVOIX

see note p. 625

60-7  
**A**MONG the first visitors to the land now embraced within the limits of this state came Pierre François Xavier De Charlevoix, who was born, lived and died a Frenchman. Saint Quentin, where he was born in 1682, about one hundred miles north east of Paris, was an ancient city and an important one since the time of the Romans, when it was a military stronghold with a wall around it. Today it is a manufacturing center for textile fabrics, principally of cotton. Its cathedral, one of the finest gothic structures in the north of France, was in existence at the time Charlevoix was living. His native city has erected no monument to the memory of its distinguished son unless a little street which bears his name may be so considered and a search for souvenirs of his fame within its borders would be made in vain. We know the place and date of his birth but almost nothing of his family or his life as an author, missionary or private individual, except by inference. The biography of Father Charlevoix is to be found only in his books, a traveller—he related his explorations a man of letters and the editor of a paper for twenty-two years—his articles disclose his character, but there was never an author in the world less thirsty for fame and glory or more honestly devoted to his work than he. One would say that he had made it a rule to avoid speaking of himself or his work. In the matter of autographs only one or two signatures are known to exist but his voluminous writings are a living tribute to his patient industry and perseverance. He was one of the earliest historians of New France, the one who did most to make Canada known to Europeans of whom the educated class to this day show with pride his tawny volumes in their libraries. The private library of George Washington contained a copy of his "Journal" its pages well margined with notes, proof that the "Father of His Country" consulted Charlevoix when exploring the valleys of the Wabash and the Ohio.



PIERRE FRANÇOIS XAVIER DE CHARLEVOIX

That the parents of Charlevoix were pious people might be inferred from the fact that he was named from two saints, and that he was educated for the priesthood. At the early age of sixteen he joined the "Society of Jesus," known more familiarly as the Jesuits, and while yet a deacon at the age of twenty-three years he was sent by his superiors to Quebec in Canada, where for four years he taught grammar in the college there. He returned to France in 1709 where he studied theology for four years at the college of Louis le grand, in Paris. The celebrated French author, Voltaire, was a pupil of his at this college, but it is not from Charlevoix himself that we have the fact, he probably was not proud of his cynical pupil who used his influence to oppose the struggle to retain Canada under French dominion while Charlevoix chanted its praises to a forgetful generation. After completing his divinity studies he began to mingle with the literary world which occupied itself seriously with history and science and he led for some years the peaceful and regular life of a professor of Belles-letters, devoting his long life to editorial and historical works, which are an immortal monument to his memory and an invaluable contribution to the world's literature.

His first work of importance was a history of the rise and fall of Christianity in Japan, numerous churches and monasteries having been founded there, flourished for thirty years when the same prince who had welcomed the Christians caused their religion to be suppressed by edict throughout the islands of the rising sun. This early effort of Charlevoix was favorably received by the public, one critic writing as follows: "Father Charlevoix has the gift of narration so essential to the historian, his style is lively, his expression concise and correct, he holds the interest, he inspires with admiration, with honor, with pity, with devotion, because he is full of them." The

---

This paper was read at a recent meeting of the Charlevoix Historical Society. For information contained herein I am much indebted to Professor J. Edmund Roy, Professor of Belles-letters at Ottawa, Canada, who read an essay on Charlevoix in 1907 before the Royal Society of Canada, a copy of the first part of which he kindly sent me, with a promise of the second part when published. I owe most of all to the "Journal" of Father Charlevoix, a copy of which in the original French I found in the Chicago Public Library; copious extracts from which are incorporated in this paper.—The Writer.

works of greatest interest to American readers are his "History and general description of New France," which was praised by the English historian Gibbon, as an historical work of great merit, and his "Journal of a Voyage in North America made by order of the King," in which is given a most vivid and accurate description of the country and its inhabitants, the manners and customs of the Indian tribes and their villages, of the missionary establishments and colonial posts and of persons and things in general as they existed at that day, extracts from which will be cited in this paper.

Father Charlevoix as a member of the Society of Jesus, had taken the usual vows of poverty, chastity and obedience, and to be ready always to go upon missions against heresy and heathenism, carrying the cross everywhere.

When French dominion was established in America to the Jesuits was assigned the task of bearing the Christian religion to its dusky inhabitants and they became the pioneers of discovery and settlement, the paramount object being the conversion of the heathen, and extension of the church, the secondary object to promote the power and dominion of France.

There were fifteen Jesuit priests in Canada in 1635, the first and most noted of whom were Bréboeuf and Daniel, bold, aggressive and self-sacrificing to the last degree. One of them, Father Dablon, in writing of his missionary experiences and the primitive temples of that day, said, "For marbles and precious metals we employed bark, but the path to heaven is as open through a roof of bark as through vaulted ceilings of silver and gold." They carried the cross and the lily of France as emblems of religion and political dominion, assisted by the votaries of commerce. Father Charlevoix breathed the same spirit when in his preface to the History of New France he wrote—"Feeling that I owe myself to the State as a citizen, my profession also obliges me to serve the church and to devote to it, at least a portion of my vigils, to make known the mercies of the Lord and the triumph of religion."

Charlevoix was born in the reign of Louis XIV, if not the greatest King, the finest actor of royalty the world has ever

seen; with him the Jesuits were in full favor, masters of speech, miracles of persuasiveness; they set the fashion in that age of pulpit eloquence. These were the palmy days when literature flourished. The brilliant writers who did honor to France during this reign were Corneille, Moliere, La Fontaine, and their influence must have been felt by Charlevoix, but now in 1720 an opportunity came to him to revisit the land where he had won his first honors in learning and for which he had a little of the longing of homesickness. He was appointed to a double mission, that of determining the extent of the English possessions in Canada and that of the discovery of an overland route to the sea at the West, now known as the Pacific Ocean. So, at the bidding of the King, Charlevoix took his life in his hands and made that memorable journey up the St. Lawrence, through the thousand islands and the great lakes and down the Mississippi, the interesting details of which are given in his "Journal." The discovery of America by Columbus was not the result of a methodic plan but a happy chance which exceeded greatly the results expected. Columbus proceeded westward in the hope of finding the way to the Indies but was confronted by the barrier of a new world, and it remained for Balboa to discover the Pacific in 1513, and after years of effort by various explorers it was left to Magellan to find the way by water to the western ocean. Leaving Seville in 1519 he discovered the southern strait which still bears his name, and passing through it made the first voyage around the world. The authorities at Quebec had been notified in advance that Charlevoix had been charged by the King with the discovery of an overland route to the western sea and were instructed to permit him to proceed. After spending nearly a year in the research of authorities and documents Charlevoix reported that England had a right to the Nova Scotian peninsula, and that her rights had never exceeded its limits. It was through the enforcement of these rights by the English that the French inhabitants of Acadia were evicted from their homes, the pitiful details of which are portrayed in Longfellow's beautiful poem "Evangeline."

It was on the first of May, 1721, that Charlevoix left Montreal for the known West in search of the unknown, leaving civilization for a wilderness, with an equipage consisting of two large canoes, eight attendants and a companion. The little flotilla ascended the rapids of the St. Lawrence, reached Niagara, skirted Lake Erie and on the eighth of June debarked at Detroit for a ten day rest.

Charlevoix was enchanted with the beauty and variety of the scenery which he had viewed thus far, he writes of it as follows:

"If one could journey for ever under a serene sky and a delightful climate upon water clear as the purest fountains, finding always safe and pleasant spots for camping with the pleasures of the chase at hand, inhaling its pure air, enjoying the prospect of the most beautiful scenery, one might be tempted to travel to the end of life. I recalled to mind those ancient patriarchs who had no fixed abode. How many springs reminded me of the well of Jacob—every day a change of scene, a shelter clean and comfortable arranged and furnished in less than a quarter of an hour, strewn with unfading flowers upon a carpet of green; every where simple and natural beauty which art has not changed and cannot imitate. If these pleasures sometimes meet with interruptions through stress of weather or unexpected accident they are the more relished when they reappear."

Resuming the journey at Detroit Charlevoix writes as follows:

"It was on the eighteenth of June that I left Fort Pontchartrain, at Detroit, a little before sunset, I had gone hardly a league when a storm accompanied by a deluge of rain constrained me to go ashore. I was wet through and we passed a most uncomfortable night. The next day all I could accomplish was to cross Lake St. Claire although it was only thirty-six miles. While crossing Lake St. Claire I had in my canoe a young savage, strong and vigorous, upon whose arms I had counted much in return for the passage I had accorded him at his own request. He was not of much use to me but he

amused me greatly until the storm which arose over our heads began to alarm me. This young man had made his toilet before embarking and he couldn't take three strokes with his paddle without taking up his mirror to see if the motion of his arms had not disarranged the adjustment of his costume or if the perspiration had not obliterated the marks he had put upon his face, of red and other colors with which he had adorned it. I do not know if he hoped to reach the village of Messasaguez before night to attend some event but we could not get so far, the storm broke just as we reached an island which ended our crossing of the lake and we had to stop there. The young savage, however, did not seem to be much put out by this disappointment for these people are not easily disconcerted. Perhaps he had only intended to show himself to us in all his beauty but if that was his design he had his trouble for his pains. I had seen him as nature made him a few days before that, and I liked him much better than with this fantastic assortment of colors which had cost him so much effort. One sees few women who paint their faces, but the men, especially the young men are very fond of this adornment; there are some who spend half a day in prinking thus, solely for the purpose of going from door to door to show themselves, returning very self-contented even when no one has said a word!

"We entered Lake Huron the twenty-first, about ten o'clock in the morning and we enjoyed there the diversion of fishing for sturgeon.

"The next day in spite of the thunder which rumbled all day, but only threatened us, I advanced nearly twenty-five miles into the lake, but on the twenty-fifth a thick fog which prevented us from seeing four feet from the canoe compelled us to go more slowly because we were navigating upon a rocky coast which in many places was not covered with half a foot of water, it extends away out into the lake and is ten miles long, our Canadians called it 'les pays plat'—the flat lands. The day following we reached the 'Baye du Saguinam' which is twenty-five or thirty miles wide and twice as long. The 'Outaouais' have a village at the head of this bay which I am

assured is in a beautiful country. From there to 'Mackinac' one sees nothing attractive—no more vines, poor woods and very little hunting. Ten leagues from the edge of Saginaw Bay one sees two rivers, quite large ones, two leagues apart and four or five leagues further on 'L'Anse au Townerre' or Thunder Bay, seven or eight miles wide and not very deep.

"Michillimackinac is at forty-five degrees and thirty minutes North latitude and the course which extends one hundred leagues from Detroit along the West shore of Lake Huron is almost North.<sup>11</sup>

Continuing the journal Charlevoix says of Mackinaw, "I arrived the twenty-eighth in this port which is most dilapidated since Monsieur de la Motte Cadillac has attached to Detroit the better part of the savages who were located there, especially the Hurons. Several Ottawas have followed them there, others have scattered among the islands of the Beavers, there only remains here a mediocre village where nevertheless, quite a large trade in furs is done because it is the passage or rendezvous of numerous savage nations. They have kept the Fort and Mission House which are not now much occupied not having found much docility among the Ottawas; but the Court of France deems their presence necessary in a place where it is needful to treat often with our allies, to exert their influence upon the Frenchmen who go there in great numbers. I am assured that since the establishment of Detroit and the dispersion of the savages which it has occasioned, several Northern nations who were accustomed to bring their furs here have been going to Hudson Bay to trade with the English but Monsieur de la Motte failed to foresee this difficulty since we were then in possession of the Hudson Bay.

<sup>11</sup> In spelling words in which we use the letter "W" Charlevoix had to use a substitute for it as there is no letter "W" in the French alphabet, so in writing the word Saginaw he spelled it S-a-g-u-i-n-a-m. In writing Mackinaw he used a "C" in place of the "W" but he pronounced it nearly as we do when we use the "W" so that the pronunciation of Mackinac should be the same whether spelled with a "C" or a "W" and to speak of Mackinac pronouncing the "c" is a mistake—the difference in spelling today is only for the convenience of the Post Office department. It is Mackinaw City and Mackinac Island, regardless of the spelling. We who live in Charlevoix should call it Mackinaw and let the resorters call it Mackinac if they will.

"The situation of Mackinaw is very advantageous for commerce. This port is between three great lakes; Michigan, which has three hundred leagues of coast without counting the great bay which discharges into it; Lake Huron, which has three hundred and fifty leagues of coast in the form of a triangle, and Lake Superior, which has five hundred. All these are navigable for the largest boats and the two former are separated only by a narrow strait which also has sufficient water for them and they could also navigate with no obstacle in Lake Erie to Niagara. It is true that there is no communication between Lake Huron and Lake Superior except by a stream about twenty-two leagues long, much interrupted by rapids but these rapids do not prevent the canoes coming to discharge at Mackinaw all that can be brought out of Lake Superior. This lake is two hundred leagues long from east to west and in some places eighty leagues in width from north to south. All the south coast is sandy and nearly straight. It would be dangerous to be surprised there by a wind from the north. The north shore is better suited to navigation because it is rock-bound which makes little harbors where it is very easy to take refuge and nothing is more necessary when navigating in canoes in this lake where travellers have noticed a very singular phenomenon. When there is going to be a storm they say, one is notified two days in advance. At first there is noticed a little trembling upon the surface of the water and this lasts all day without increasing sensibly. The next day the lake is covered with pretty large waves but they do not break all that day so that one can proceed without fear and can make good progress if the wind is favorable; but the third day when you would expect it the least, the lake is all in a turmoil. The ocean in its greatest fury is not more agitated and it is necessary to have at a fixed point an asylum for one's safety such as is to be found upon the north shore rather than upon the south, where after the second day it is necessary to camp well back from the water's edge.

"The savages through gratitude for the quantities of fish which this lake furnished them and the awe which its vast

expanse inspires, have made of it a sort of divinity, offering sacrifices to it. I think, nevertheless, that it is not to the lake itself but to the genius which there presides that they address their devotions. If one can give credence to them the origin of the lake had something divine about it. It was 'Michabou' the god of waters who formed it as a preserve for beavers. In the canal through which it discharges into Lake Huron, there is a rapid caused by large rocks. Our missionaries who had there a very flourishing church named it 'LeSault de Sainte Marie.' These rocks according to those barbarians are the remains of a dam which God had created to hold back the waters of the rivers which had filled this great lake.

"Upon the shores in some places and around certain islands, large pieces of copper are found which are the object of the superstitious veneration of the savages, who regard them as presents from the gods who reside beneath the waters. They gather the smallest fragments and preserve them with care but make no use of them. When Michabou, add the savages, formed Lake Superior he dwelt at Michillimackinac where he was born, this is properly speaking, the name of a little island nearly round, quite high, situated at the extremity of Lake Huron and has been extended by usage to all the country around it. The island may be eight or nine miles in circumference and can be seen thirty-six miles away. There are two other islands to the south, of which the farthest is five or six leagues long, the other perfectly round and very small, both of them are well wooded and the soil good, while Mackinaw is nothing but a rock altogether sterile and thinly covered with a little moss, and grasses.

"The Michillimackinaws' gain their livelihood by fishing and there is perhaps no place in the world where fish are more abundant. They catch three kinds among which are monstrous big ones, and in such quantities that a savage with his spear sometimes gets fifty in three hours time, but the most famous

---

What a contrast between the picture of Mackinaw in 1721 as Father Charlevoix draws it and the one he would draw today could he but visit it. The barren rock is now a bower of arbor-vitae and evergreens interspersed with maples and other deciduous trees whose summer hues and autumn tints are the despair of artist or writer.

of all is the 'whitefish.' It is about the size and shape of a mackerel; fresh or salted, nothing is better among fishes. The savages say that it was Michabou who taught their ancestors to fish, that he invented nets and that it was the spider's web which gave him the idea. These people do not give their god more honor than is his due since they do not hesitate to send him to school to a vile insect! As far as one can judge the land is not good but we need not go far to find good soil and this is true of the Beaver Islands which are at the left soon after entering Lake Michigan. The Ottawas who retired to these islands plant corn there—they learned it from the Huron Indians."

At Mackinaw Charlevoix could not get any information as to a route to the Pacific and hearing that some Sioux Indians were camped at Green Bay he went there to make inquiries of them. Their responses were vague and conflicting. He returned to Mackinaw convinced that he would have to go to the extremity of Lake Superior to get the desired information. He hesitates—and no wonder—a journey of such length in a frail canoe, full of uncertainties and dangers would make any one hesitate. Could he have taken the rail at St. Ignace and alighted in Duluth the same day it would have been a different matter. He was groping in the dark while we view his problem in the light of day. He decided to follow his instructions and proceed to the Gulf. July 31, 1721, Father Charlevoix continues: "I left Michillimackinaw the day before yesterday at noon and here I am a prisoner since yesterday in a little island without a name. A canoe coming from St. Joseph river, where I am going could not leave any more than we, although the wind was favorable, the weather was too threatening and the lake too rough—Although the wind was contrary the twenty-ninth I made eight leagues. I made first five leagues to the west to reach Lake Michigan and then turned south which is the course for one hundred leagues to St. Joseph. Nothing could be more beautiful than the country which separates Lakes Michigan and Huron—Yesterday I made three leagues more when a severe blow compelled me to stop at this island.

I will amuse myself here in trying to acquaint you with the native inhabitants of this vast country through a large part of which I have already gone.

"The savages of Canada are generally well built and of good size except in some nations, they are strong and of a clear complexion, they would live a long time if they took better care of themselves, but they ruin their constitutions by forced marches, long fasts, by excessive eating; besides in childhood they often go bare-footed in the water, snow and on the ice. Brandy, which the Europeans have brought them for which they have a passion passing description, and which they drink only to intoxicate, has completed their destruction and has contributed in no small degree to the decay of these people who today are only a fraction of what they were a hundred and fifty years ago. If this continues they will disappear entirely."

"River Saint Joseph, August 16, 1721. I arrived at this post, where we have a mission, a week ago. The house of the commander is called the fort because it is surrounded by a palisade, there are a few cannons to keep the savages respectful; but I continue my journal where I left off. The first day of August after having crossed under sail, a bay thirty leagues deep, I left on the right the Beaver Islands which seem to me to be very well wooded and a few leagues further I perceived upon an eminence of sand a bush which in passing has the appearance of a recumbent animal. The French call it 'L'ours qui dort.'<sup>4</sup> I made twenty leagues that day and camped on a little island at 44 degrees and thirty minutes North latitude about the same as Montreal. From the entrance to Lake Michigan up to this island the shores are very sandy, but a little way inland the country looks very good, judging at least from the magnificent forests with which it is covered, besides it is well watered for we went hardly a league without either a large creek or a pretty river and the farther south the larger the rivers and the longer the peninsula which separates Lake Michigan from Lake Huron, enlarging as it extends southward.

<sup>4</sup>Sleeping Bear.

Most of these rivers are small and shallow at their mouths—a peculiar feature is that most all of them have lakes of two, three or four leagues in circumference not far from their mouths. They are caused, no doubt, by the quantity of sand which they carry down and these sands pushed back by the west winds which prevail, accumulate at the mouths of the rivers, damming the waters so as to form the lakes, which prevent the country being flooded when the snow melts.

“The third, I entered the river Pere Marquette, to verify my information with regard to it. It is at first only a brook, but fifteen yards higher up one enters a lake which has nearly two leagues of shore. To enable it to discharge into Lake Michigan, one would say that the high bluff had been cut with a pick—it had been so represented to me.

I navigated thus pleasantly to the River St. Joseph which I entered on the sixth very late or the seventh very early for it was near midnight when we arrived there, having reposed for two hours at the lake of Black River eight leagues away, where there is plenty of ginseng.

“The River St. Joseph is more than three hundred miles long and its source not far from Lake Erie, it is navigable for two hundred and forty miles and in the seventy-five miles that I penetrated it I saw only good lands with trees of prodigious height under which grows in certain places very beautiful ferns. I was two days in making this trip but on the evening of the first I ran great risk of going no further! I was mistaken for a bear and I came very near being killed as such by one of my guides! This is how it happened. After supper and prayers, it being very hot, I went for a walk along the bank of the river. A spaniel which followed me every where, took a notion to jump into the water to fetch something which I had thoughtlessly thrown into it. My men who thought I had retired, especially since it was quite late and the night a dark one, hearing the noise which the dog made, thought it a deer crossing the river and two of them rushed out with their guns loaded. Luckily for me one of them, a thoughtless fellow, was called back by the others lest he

should make them miss the game, but it might have happened that through carelessness he might not have missed me! The other advanced slowly, saw me about twenty paces from him and had not the least doubt that I was a bear standing upon its hind legs as these animals always do when they hear a noise. At the sight the hunter poised his gun into which he had put three balls and bending close to the ground came towards me as quickly as he could. He was about to shoot when I, on my side, thought I saw something but without being able to distinguish what it was, not doubting however, that it was one of my men, it came into my head to ask him if he was taking me for a bear. He made no reply and when I had joined him I found him dumbfounded, as if seized with horror at the thought of the tragedy of which he had so narrowly escaped being the cause—my comrades told me what had happened!"

We will not follow the journal farther as it describes the journey down the Mississippi and back to France. How little did the modest Charlevoix dream as he sailed past these shores that his name would one day be written upon a beautiful city "Charlevoix the Beautiful!" over the entrance to its free library and upon a noble county in Michigan and a vast county in Canada as large as three departments in France, bristling with mountains as beautiful as those of Switzerland, abounding in picturesque lakes and divided by rivers, beside which the largest in France would seem like brooks; or that upon the facade of the House of Parliament in Quebec his name would be inscribed in letters of gold beside the most famous names in history. Honors which are certainly well deserved.

Father Charlevoix died in February, 1761, and was spared the humiliation of seeing the Jesuits banished from France later on in the same year, and the extinction of French Dominion in 1763.

What estimate shall be put upon the character of the man whose name has been given to our county and city? The side-lights which are reflected from his life are neither dim nor flickering, but reveal to us plainly a character of marked

strength of will and purpose, softened by subjection to the will of his Divine Master whom he served with perfect devotion. A member of the Society of Jesus, he illustrated in his life the example of the lowly Nazarene. That highest virtue was his which controls self for the good of others. He was not a self-seeker in any sense. Riches, ambition, fame, self-love, all were renounced for the duty of service, and no nobler motive can actuate anyone. He was the servant of the King of France entrusted with important missions, but above all he was the servant of the King of Kings, entrusted with the most important of all missions, the advancement of the Kingdom of Heaven upon Earth. No more honorable title could be given him than the one he bore, that of "Father Charlevoix." His name should be an inspiration to all to emulate his example of devotion to high ideals.

## GRAND RAPIDS FURNITURE CENTENNIAL

BY ARTHUR S. WHITE

GRAND RAPIDS

ON the second day of January, 1928, the one hundredth exposition of furniture, lamps, rugs and kindred goods, was opened in Grand Rapids. Exhibits were made by 365 manufacturers, seventy-two of whom operate factories in the city.

Among the lines displayed which expressed the mechanic arts as applied to furniture of America, England, France, Spain, Italy, Holland, China, Japan and other civilized nations, were those of prominent manufacturing establishments located in New York, Chicago, Minneapolis, Milwaukee, St. Louis, Indianapolis, Rockford, Ill., Jamestown and Rochester, N. Y., Holland, Owosso, Detroit, Allegan, Hastings, Charlotte, Zeeland and other cities of Michigan. In this connection a statement of Mr. C. B. Hamilton, secretary and treasurer of the Grand Rapids Market Association is of interest:

"The floor space occupied in the six exhibition buildings was 1,200,000 square feet. An equal amount of space was occupied in the warerooms of local manufacturers, with samples. The grand total of space covered with lines on sale therefore was 2,400,000 square feet.

"For the celebration of the One Hundredth Market we set out to accumulate \$100,000 in addition to the funds of the Market Association. We succeeded in raising \$94,000 and will raise the balance of that amount. The money was budgeted as follows:

For a historical exhibit.....	\$30,000
For National Publicity—Saturday Evening Post.....	25,000
For Direct mailings to dealers.....	15,000
For Trade paper advertisements, etc.....	10,000
For Entertainments .....	20,000
	<hr/>
	\$100,000

"The actual attendance of buyers was 2,465 as compared with 2,258 one year ago."

The Market was closed on January 21.

For the convenience of dealers and their buyers, local manufacturers provided fifty automobiles to convey them to and from factory warerooms in outlying districts, and also served substantial lunches to all who called on them.

The Market was opened without formal ceremony. One thousand buyers had arrived on the 4th of January, when a banquet was served at the Armory. Out-of-town exhibitors and their salesmen present numbered about 1,200.

An interesting feature of the season was a museum in which the various phases of development in the furniture industry during the past fifty years were portrayed.

Banquets served to the local Association of Traveling Salesmen, the National Association of Veteran Salesmen, boxing contests, musical and vaudeville entertainments combined to make the season enjoyable.

Soon after the general government obtained possession of a large section of Western Michigan, through a treaty negotiated and completed with the Indians, and lands obtained had been placed on sale, the Village Corporation of Grand Rapids was organized. Adventurous citizens from New York, Ohio, and other states entered the community and set themselves to work at various occupations, in an effort to acquire independence, socially and financially. Among such early settlers were William Haldane, a skilled worker in wood. Haldane opened a little shop and commenced the manufacture of common wooden chairs, bedsteads, coffins and tables. Wire mattresses and bed springs were unknown to the people of the world in 1840. Feather beds, quilts and such necessities for the comfort of sleepers were supported with ropes, when a bedstead was in use, stretched from the rails at the foot, head and sides.

Green lumber was scarce, and seasoned lumber scarcer. The government erected a small mill, containing an upright saw, as agreed in the contract with the Indians. Haldane attached brackets to the ceiling of his little shop to support lumber

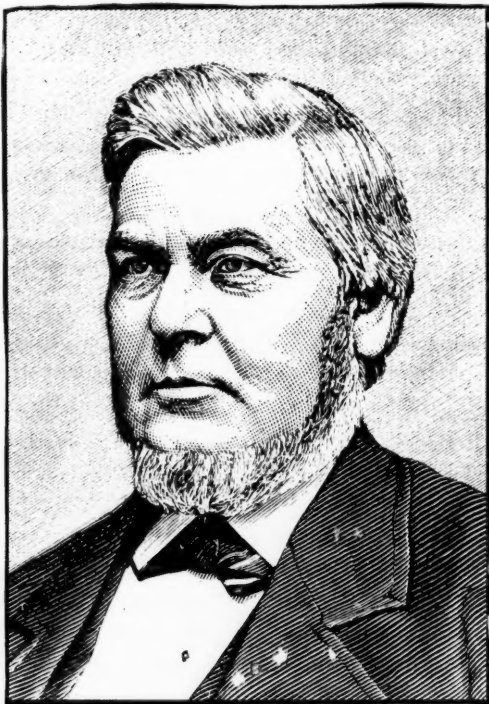
placed thereon for seasoning by the artificial heat of the building. Boards were also placed on end, surrounding a big stove. The upright saw in the mill cut a wide, wasteful kerf. Surfaces of the lumber so cut were not as smooth as the lumber used in recent years, sawed with modern circular saws. Haldane bought a lathe, operated with a treadle, and a few hand tools for use in his shop. He was industrious, frugal and prudent. As a class the people of the community were poor, and in settling his claims for furniture sold to such people, he was obliged at times to accept the products of the little farms and woodlands of the neighborhood. These he traded to merchants for the things he needed in his home.

As the years rolled by there was a gradual increase in the number of inhabitants of the region. Among the arrivals were William T. Powers, Charles C. Comstock, E. M. Ball, George Widdicomb, the Winchester Brothers, Buddington and Turnham, A. B. and George M. Pullman, Julius and W. A. Berkey, and other cabinet makers, all of whom were destined to gain deserved prominence in the business of manufacturing furniture, and as active agents in the promoting of other enterprises of vast importance to the entire world.

Sooner or later the men, named above, opened little shops and entered into competition for the trade of the community and its vicinity. The village lacked transportation facilities. Kalamazoo, the nearest railroad station, was fifty miles distant, while Grand River was filled with ice four or five months of the year, making shipments by water impossible. Steamboat owners did not employ crafts to navigate the great lakes during winter months, as they have in more recent years.

The panic of 1857 caused a widespread depression in the trade and commerce of Western Michigan, and most of the cabinet shops in the village were closed. Among those who weathered the storm and emerged from its destructive power, badly shattered financially, but undefeated, were C. C. Comstock and the Berkey Brothers, whose shop was opened in 1853. George Widdicomb, who operated a small shop with four sons, two of whom later became prominent in the furni-

ture manufacturing industry, as helpers, was forced to quit. A. B. Pullman invented the lower berth of the sleeping car and an employe named Elmendorf the upper. He moved to Chicago with his brother, George M., and entered into a contract with the Chicago, Alton & St. Louis Railroad to remodel one of its



W. A. BERKEY

day coaches, and provide berths for the use of passengers traveling over its lines at night. From that seemingly unimportant transaction the great Pullman transportation service known to all people was developed.

William T. Powers and his partner, Ball, were out of the furniture business when the panic occurred, having sold their shop to Buddington & Turnham. Powers re-entered the trade

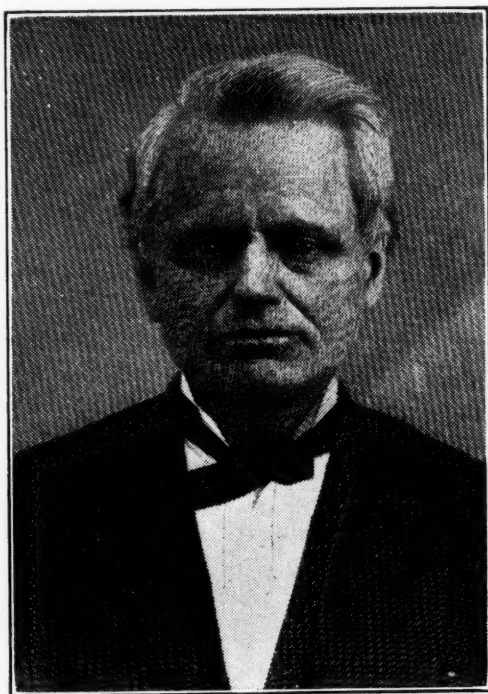
twice in later years. He was an "in and outer," and yet an important contributor to the upbuilding of the industry.

As stated above, much difficulty was experienced by the early producers of furniture on account of the scarcity of dry lumber and the yet-to-be-invented dry kilns. Before it can be used properly, lumber must be cured. The sap must be removed, else the moisture causes panels to warp, glue joints to break and destroys finishes. Lumber was stacked, each board separated from others by narrow pieces of wood, to remain four years, where dry kilns now successfully provided, were not available. Local manufacturers of eighty years ago were unable financially to carry stocks of lumber in their yards for seasoning four years, hence much of such material was unfit for use.

In an address delivered before a convention of manufacturers held in Grand Rapids during the month of August, 1884, Mr. Comstock related the following amusing incidents: "A farmer of Walker township bought a four-drawer bureau of a local cabinet maker. Green lumber had been used in its construction. Shortly after the purchase had been made the farmer returned the bureau, in a very dilapidated condition, to the maker. The artificial heat of the farmer's home had played havoc with the piece. 'Drop it,' the cabinet maker remarked, 'and take another; perhaps you may get a better one and again you may not.' Also a set of chairs sold to a farmer were returned to a cabinet maker in sacks. They were composed of green lumber and ~~had~~ fallen apart."

The New England Furniture Company was organized and commenced the manufacture of furniture in 1880. William A. Brown was employed as its traveling representative. While spending a few days in Chicago with the trade, Mr. Brown entered the store of a dealer, located on West Madison Street. The dealer was engaged with a prospective customer. At that moment she was making a study of a big, showy chamber suite, made of half seasoned lumber. A big panel in the headboard asserted its presence with a bulging concave not unlike that of the typical city alderman. "I do not like the appearance of

the panel," the lady declared. In reply the foxy dealer remarked, "Why lady, that is the latest artistic effect in the manufacture of furniture." It was produced by an especially constructed machine that cost the owner a large amount of money. The novelty embraced in the construction of the machine was recognized by the patent office of the Federal government, which granted protection to the inventor.



*C. A. Comstock*

Charles A. Comstock purchased the Winchester shop in 1856. He considered the building too small for operation profitably, and added two stories. When completed, the structure contained three floors, 50 x 125 feet and an attic. It was covered

by a gabled roof. A steam power plant, a stroke jointer, which resembled, when in operation, the drive wheels and piston rod of a locomotive, a disk sander attached to one end of a revolving shaft, a furniture planer, a lathe, rip and cut-off saws were added. Capable workmen, among whom were Elias Matter, A. B. Pullman and George Widdicomb, Sr., were employed and the manufacture of bedsteads, bureaus, washstands and chairs was commenced. Furniture was not supplied in suites fifty years ago by producers. Mr. Comstock soon learned that the local and suburban markets could not absorb the output of his plant so he pulled a few hairs from his head, pondered deeply and finally resolved to look for trade outside of the state.

After making an investigation of the trade territory then available for exploitation, Mr. Comstock decided that the middle west presented the most favorable field for the sale of his surplus products, and that Peoria, Ill., and St. Louis were desirable points for distribution. Stores were opened in those cities under the firm names of Comstock, Avery & Co., and Burrell, Comstock & Co. The venture proved profitable. Those stores were maintained many years after Mr. Comstock had withdrawn his interest in the firms named. Dealers located in Chicago and Milwaukee became interested in Comstock furniture and bought liberal quantities for their stores. Credit is due Mr. Comstock for his efforts, successfully carried to fruition to place Grand Rapids before the business world as a furniture manufacturing center.

Berkey & Gay, Nelson, Matter & Co. and the Phoenix Furniture Co. exhibited samples of their work at the Centennial Exposition held in Philadelphia in 1876. Berkey & Gay selected samples from their regular stock; Nelson, Matter & Co., and the Phoenix Furniture Co. exhibited chamber suites designed and constructed especially for the occasion. These exhibits attracted the attention of thousands of dealers, who became at once interested in the products of those corporations. For the convenience of dealers, in the eastern states, the companies mentioned leased warerooms in New York City. Berkey & Gay were represented by John E. Foster, Nelson,

Matter & Co., by James W. Wheelock, the Phoenix Furniture Company's agents were A. L. and C. W. Baldwin and later Fred Kleindienst. The Widdicomb Furniture Company's line was exhibited with Berkey & Gay's.

A small number of buyers came to Grand Rapids during the years 1876-77. During the year 1878 their number increased considerably. Between forty and fifty, mostly from the western cities, attended the winter sales of that year.

Following the lead of Mr. Comstock in seeking wider markets for their output, manufacturers of Grand Rapids erected a pavilion in Audubon Park, New Orleans, and made an extensive and creditable exhibit of samples during the cotton exposition held in that city forty years ago. Exhibits were also made of Grand Rapids furniture at the World's Fair, held in Chicago in 1893; the Pan-American Fair at Buffalo, and the Louisiana Purchase Centennial at St. Louis. Local exhibitions of manufacturers, art products and kindred articles were held annually in Milwaukee, Chicago, Pittsburg, Detroit, Louisville and other cities to which the furniture makers of Grand Rapids contributed samples of their workmanship. Many of the pieces shown were especially designed for the purpose stated.

From time to time efforts were made to establish markets for Grand Rapids furniture at various points in Europe. W. S. Gunn and his son William A. were most successful in carrying out such a purpose. Their products consisted of roll top office desks, sectional bookcases and filing cabinets, constructed under letters patent owned by the Gunn Furniture Co. Their wares were so superior to the products of the foreign manufacturers that an important volume of trade was quickly established.

Albert Stickley presented a line of rockers to the English people and won their favor.

In 1879 William Angus & Son, of London, England, entered into a contract with the Phoenix Furniture Company. Under the operation and direction of William Morrison, a representative of the firm, the company manufactured a large quantity of furniture which was shipped to England in the white,

knocked down. Several years time was required to complete the contract. A renewal of the contract was refused, the company having in the meantime built up a large demand for its own products.

A considerable volume of trade, altho not as large as formerly, has been established in Cuba, Porto Rico, Hawaii, South America, and the Philippines. The recent development of the furniture manufacturing industry on the Pacific coast has, however, somewhat affected the business of local manufacturers in those countries. The Dominion of Canada has been for many years a strong market for American manufacturers of furniture. While the industry has been developed materially by the Canadians in recent years, the continued attendance of buyers from the Dominion upon the semi-annual sales held in Grand Rapids attests the strength of American manufacturers in that country. During the panic of 1873, Canada was the most favorable market for Grand Rapids furniture. Money was scarce; thousands were unemployed and general business was paralyzed. American furniture was admitted to Canada free of tariff taxes. The attractive prices and substantial values offered by the producers of Grand Rapids appealed to the dealers of that country strongly and they bought the goods liberally. A local manufacturer remarked to the writer "Canada saved us from bankruptcy. It was the only market of importance for our goods for which we were promptly paid in real money."

In the early years of the industry traveling salesmen used small models, made of wood, to illustrate the styles of the lines they represented. Elias Matter, while engaged in soliciting orders from dealers in Jackson, Mich., met a salesman who carried a case of photographs of a line of baby carriages. Mr. Matter decided that furniture might be sold through the same means. Upon his return to Grand Rapids, a photographer was engaged to try his art on several styles of bedroom suites. The first specimens produced were not satisfactory, owing to the improper handling of the lights and shades of the gallery. Eventually very good photographs of the styles were taken.

Wooden models were discarded and the use of photographs quickly became general in the industry.

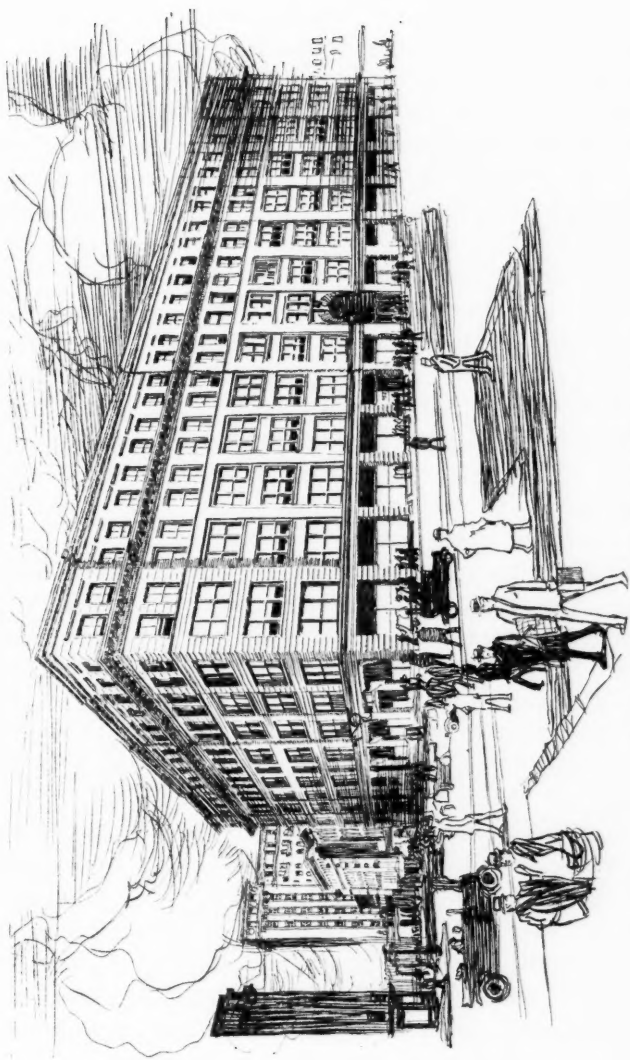
About 1886 Berkey & Gay, Nelson, Matter & Company, and the Phoenix Furniture Company closed their warerooms in New York. The cost of maintaining, experience had proven, was greater than the benefits derived through their operation. One of the immediate effects of that action was a large increase in the number of buyers attending the sales in Grand Rapids.

Manufacturers located in other cities and their salesmen complained that when calls were made at the offices of merchants, they were usually informed that the buyers were in Grand Rapids. To meet the situation created mainly by the closing of the Grand Rapids warerooms in New York, out-of-town manufacturers commenced the making of preparations necessary for showing their lines in Grand Rapids. In July, 1881, Fred D. Hills, who represented a firm of chair makers, located in New York city, leased the rotunda of the old Morton House and filled it with the samples. To Mr. Hill's credit is due the showing in Grand Rapids of the first samples that were not of local manufacture.

In July, 1883, Rogers & Son, of Cleveland, secured an empty store located on Monroe street, and placed a line of medium priced chamber suites on sale. About the same time the Connersville (Ind.) Furniture Company obtained space for an exhibit of its wares in the Livingston hotel. The Muskegon Valley Furniture Company secured an empty store to serve its purpose. John A. Flick leased a third story loft and placed on view a line of chairs, made by the Buckeye Chair Company, of Ravenna, O. Mr. Flick was widely known as the champion one-arm gun shooter of America.

Conrey & Birely exhibited a line of tables. The Grand Haven Furniture Company occupied a store on Monroe Avenue. That Company sold one chamber suite during its first season in Grand Rapids.

The number of out-of-town exhibits grew in number and the demand for space increased steadily from time to time. The Jamestown Lounge Co. obtained a lease of the parlors of the



The Waters-Klingman Exposition Building

once popular Owashtanong club; A. P. Bohlinger & Company, of St. Louis, paid \$800 for the privilege of using the billiard room in the old Morton house for a show room for two weeks.

Phil. Klingman arrived in the city about 1884 with samples of chairs made by F. Herhold & Son, of Chicago, and by the Boston (Mass.) Chair Company. Klingman was a magnetic person. He perceived an opportunity for the development of a great market, and under his inspiration it grew rapidly in importance. Klingman leased floors in the newly erected Blodgett Building and filled them with samples. The Phoenix Furniture Company, the Estey Manufacturing Company, the Orinoco Furniture Company and other manufacturers leased and occupied the floors remaining, and the Blodgett became the first regularly equipped furniture building in Grand Rapids. Within a few years following the Pythian Temple, the Fox (Masonic) building, the Barnhart block and the Shepard building were leased to exhibitors of furniture. The demand for space continued from year to year to such an extent that Dudley E. Waters was induced to erect the Waters-Klingman building with eight acres of floor space. Others interested erected the Keeler, the Manufacturers', the Exchange and the Temple to provide floor room for out-of-town manufacturers. The latest additions made to the floors available to exhibitors were provided by G. A. Hendricks, owner of the Pantlind Exhibition and Fine Arts buildings, and the Spencer-Duffy company.

About 1890 a promoter of consolidations of business enterprises, named Moulton of Boston, presented to prominent manufacturers a plan he had conceived for consolidating the industry. It met with an unfavorable response. Several years later Charles R. Flint, of New York, noted as a successful organizer of trusts, presented a plan to effect the consolidation of the factories operated in the manufacture of "case goods"—suites for the dining room, the bedroom, the library, etc. The plan was favorably received. Under its operation the cost of production and distribution would be greatly reduced. Thousands of employees would be discharged; expositions would

be discontinued and many factories that could not be operated economically would be closed. Two men, whom President Wilson would have called "Willful," William Widdicomb and E. H. Foote, managers of great case goods plants, stubbornly refused to co-operate in giving the plan potency. Their attitude served to defeat the purpose of the promoter.

## THE AUTOMOBILE INDUSTRY IN MICHIGAN

BY EARL G. FULLER, M. A.

(HIGHLAND PARK JUNIOR COLLEGE)

TODAY life is high-tensioned and complex. On every hand there is evidence of this modern trend. The restless energy of the rural communities vies with that of the throbbing cities. Our centers of population are congested and our trunk line highways are lined daily with traffic. New problems are constantly pressing for solution. And of all the causes which have contributed to this situation the automobile is the most vital factor.

It is quite true, as one author states, that there has been a "general movement throughout history which has for its object the annihilation of space by man. To conquer distance has been one of the great problems of life."<sup>1</sup> Near the end of the thirteenth century, according to the same source, the learned Franciscan friar, Roger Bacon, wrote: "We will be able to propel carriages with incredible speed without the assistance of any animal."<sup>2</sup> Steamships and flying machines were likewise predicted at this time. We are told that by the seventeenth century experiments were made in Holland with various types of wind-driven vehicles, and that "in 1619 an English patent was granted to Ramsay and Wildgoose which included "drawing carts without horses."<sup>3</sup> During the same century one Johann Haustach of Nuremberg is credited with being a "manufacturer of chariots going by spring and going two thousand paces an hour." Considerable progress seems to have been made about 1680, at the time the first steps were taken in the development of the steam engine, with Sir Isaac Newton as the central figure. Both England and France saw much activity along this line during the next century, but it was subsequently forgotten in the renewed attention paid to the steam engine and the railroad.

<sup>1</sup>R. T. Sloss, *The Book of the Automobile*. Int.

<sup>2</sup>*Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup>*Ibid.*

The real awakening which has made all former progress in the industrial revolution pale in comparison did not come until the closing years of the nineteenth century, and then America was to become the home of that transformation. Here in Michigan was to center that mighty industry which is fast revolutionizing modern life; an industry which today is said to consume 84 per cent of the rubber used in the United States, 50 per cent of the plate glass, 8 per cent of the copper, 11 per cent of the iron and steel, 65 per cent of the upholstery leather, and 7,494,000,000 gallons of gasoline annually. It is with some of the aspects of that industry that this paper is primarily concerned.

Back in the early nineties two or three men vied with each other for first honors. In Springfield, Mass., in 1892, Charles E. Duryea began work on a machine which bore his name and which is said to have been America's first gasoline motor vehicle. This was described as a "power buggy" and "not a successful vehicle to put in the hands of customers."<sup>4</sup> It seems to have been the conception of Duryea that his motor buggy "would be sold to those people who could not afford a span of horses, rather than selling it as a vehicle to displace horses, as time has demonstrated."

Many are disposed to give premier honors to Elwood Haynes of Kokomo, Ind., as the "inventor, designer, and builder of America's first successful automobile."<sup>5</sup> His early efforts are described by the *Brooklyn Eagle* as follows: "It was on July 4, 1894, that he towed a queer-looking buggy without tongue or shafts out from his shop in the city to the country road and drove it back to the city without a horse, to the astonishment of the natives, at the speed of seven miles an hour."<sup>6</sup> Soon after this trial trip he drove his horseless carriage into Chicago and a policeman ordered him "to get that contraption off the streets" or he would "run him in." However Haynes persevered, and after using the car for a few years, in 1910 presented it to the Smithsonian Institution. By virtue of these

<sup>4</sup>*Automobile Trade Journal*, XXIX, No. 26, p. 348.

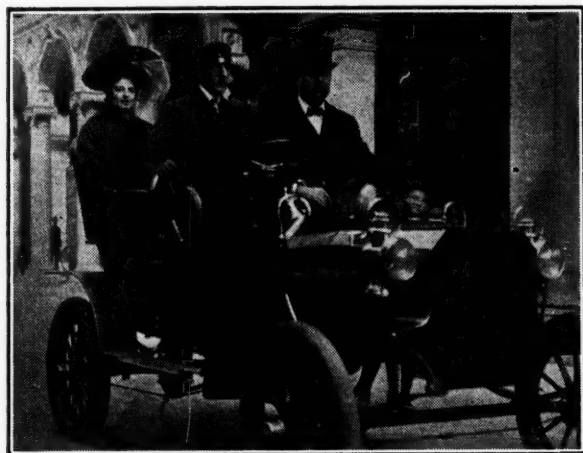
<sup>5</sup>*Literary Digest*, LXXXV, 72-3.

<sup>6</sup>*Ibid.* Quoted from *Brooklyn Eagle*.

early efforts he is often referred to as the "father of the automobile."

Marshall McCluer of Spring Lake, Mich., is also credited with being one of the first experimenters in the field. As early as 1891 he is said to have built a type of open buggy which attained a speed of twenty miles per hour, but it does not appear that he followed up his initial success.<sup>7</sup>

And finally, a list of the pioneers would not be complete without paying tribute to the early efforts and vision of Henry Ford who produced his first car in 1892.<sup>8</sup> His work will be considered later in this article.



One of the Original Products of the Reo Shops

Michigan early assumed the lead in the production of motor cars and since then that leadership never has been seriously in danger. A long list of men and companies have materially contributed to this proud position, but reference to only a few of the leaders can be made at this time.

R. E. Olds of Lansing became prominent from the very first in the production of motor cars. Successful in his experiments as early as 1895, a two-cylinder machine was put on the

<sup>7</sup>*Trade Journal*, XXIX, Anniversary Number (25), p. 284.

<sup>8</sup>*The Ford Industries*, Dearborn, 1924.

market at that time. Continuing his efforts he finally produced the Curve Dash Olds in 1900, which was one of the most famous vehicles of its day. A small car, weighing only 580 pounds and selling at \$600, it immediately became popular, which is attested to by the following early scale of production:<sup>9</sup>

1900 .....	1400 cars
1901 .....	2100 cars
1902 .....	2500 cars
1903 .....	3000 cars
1904 .....	4000 cars

The first Buick car was built early in 1904; the Ford Model T in October, 1908; the first Hudson in July 1909; the Dodge in 1914, John and Horace for years having been associated with Ford; and the Hupmobile in 1909. All of these cars are among the leaders in production, and, with many new entries in the field, have made Michigan rank so high in the industry.

A few facts relative to the wonderful growth of the automobile industry as a whole may prove of interest. That progress during the past twenty-five years undoubtedly has been without precedent in history. In 1900 there were scarcely 5000 cars produced, with an estimated value of \$7,000,000. By 1925 the annual production exceeded 4,000,000 cars and trucks, with a value at wholesale well above \$3,000,000,000.

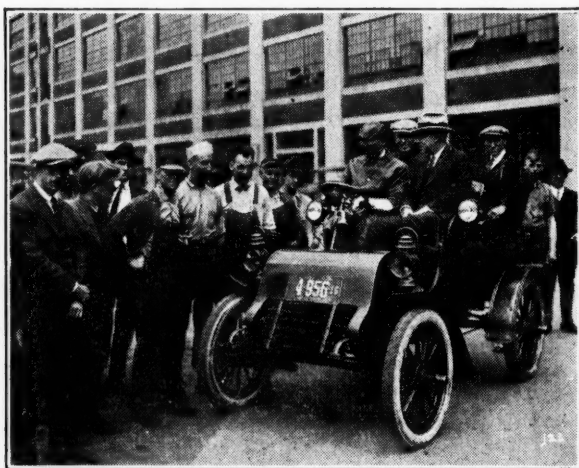
According to R. B. Prescott the motor industry during this first quarter century has passed through two stages of its development and is now only entering the third.<sup>10</sup> The first was a period of experimentation or uncertainty, and lasted from 1900 to 1908. The second from 1908 to 1920 was a period of exploitation, and was marked by a process of interweaving into the social and economic fabric of the country. The third period from 1920 has been one of growing stability.

The first statistics in the Federal Census for the automobile date from 1899. From 1914 to 1919, with reference to the value of its products, were banner years. The manufacture of

<sup>9</sup>*Trade Journal*, XXIX, 355.

<sup>10</sup>*Ibid.* XXIX, 93.

automobiles advanced in rank among the industries of the country from eighth to third place. In 1919 out of "2830 establishments in the combined industry, only 315 or 11.1 per cent, were engaged primarily in the manufacture of complete automobiles, but these establishments employed 61.4 per cent of the total number of wage earners and reported 77.5 per cent of the total value of the products."<sup>11</sup> The total value of those complete machines was \$1,554,881,496.



The Famous Single Cylinder Cadillac, One of the First Cars Manufactured by the Cadillac Motor Car Company, leaving the Factory at Detroit for Its Record 783 Mile Jaunt to New York City

Since 1904 Michigan has been pre-eminently the leading State in the Union in the manufacture of automobiles and trucks, with Ohio, New York, and Indiana following in the order named. In 1919 "this state employed 48,893 persons, or 38.5 per cent more wage earners, and reported \$987,551,882, or 156.1 per cent greater product than was reported for the entire industry in the United States in 1914."<sup>12</sup> During 1924 the total output of cars in the United States was 3,650,000, and of this number Michigan produced 3,150,000, or 93 per cent

<sup>11</sup>*United States Census* (1920), X, p. 866.

<sup>12</sup>*U. S. Census* (1920), X.

of the total.<sup>13</sup> This clearly indicates the position that the State still maintains in the motor industry. This pre-eminent leadership is made possible largely through the activity of two giant corporations, viz., the Ford Motor Co., and the General Motors Corporation of Delaware, the latter so named October 13, 1916. The two oldest units of the General Motors company are the Olds Motor Co. of Lansing, and the Cadillac Motor Co. of Detroit. During this same year, 1924, the Ford Motor Co. built 1,900,000 passenger cars and trucks, and General Motors came second with 650,000 total. Dodge Bros., and the Chevrolet Co. were the next largest producers. Only recently the latter announced a \$10,000,000 expansion program and an increased schedule for 1927 of production which gave the company a record of 112,164 cars for October and a total output for the year well above the million mark. Today it is estimated that Michigan produces fully 80 per cent of all the cars made in the United States, and ranks sixth in the Union in the number of cars in use, having a registration well above the million mark. The payroll of the industry in this State for 1924 was about equal to that of the total industries of the whole country for the year 1855.

The wonderful increase in volume production in Michigan has been made possible largely by the Ford Motor Co. of Detroit and the efforts of its founder and guiding genius, Henry Ford. Hence it deserves more than passing mention. Operating two huge plants, at Highland Park and River Rouge, with approximately 100,000 men generally employed in these units, and a total of 200,000 men in all its interests, the corporation ranks probably as the world's largest industrial concern. And it has become such almost over night.

Henry Ford produced his first car in 1892. The story told of those early efforts is interesting. It is said that "he built his first experimental engine from a piece of gas pipe for the cylinder, two-to-one gears from a clock, and the fly wheel from a valve in an electric light plant. His first gasoline car was put together in the wood-shed back of his home, and had a two

<sup>13</sup>*Michigan Manufacturer and Financial Record*, Jan. 17, 1925.

cylinder twin engine, two and one-half by six mounted side by side, and wire wheels. His first drive was to his father's farm at Dearborn, a Detroit suburb."<sup>14</sup> He started on his second car in 1896, and constructed his first racing car, a two-cylinder design, in 1899.

The Ford Motor Co. was launched in 1903, with a paid-in capital of \$28,000. Mr. Ford's idea was "to make a universal car for all the people," while the opposing idea was "to make the motor car a mark of social station and charge accordingly."<sup>15</sup> The appearance of the famous "Model T" was soon to make that dream possible and revolutionize the industry. The year of incorporation saw an initial lot of 650 of his two-cylinder designs manufactured by Dodge Bros. under contract, and his theory was then put to the test.

During these early years of the industry the Selden Patent was seriously hampering free production and growth, and it was in this connection that Mr. Ford did a most commendable thing. On May 8, 1879, George B. Selden of Rochester, N. Y., applied for a patent for a gas compression engine for propelling road vehicles, and, on Nov. 5, 1895, a patent was granted him for an improvement on road engines. He claimed "that any vehicle propelled by an internal combustion engine, manufactured since that time was an infringement of his rights under the patent. At the commencement of the year 1910, seventy-one manufacturers admitted this claim and paid to the Association of Licensed Automobile Manufacturers one and one-half per cent of the catalogue price of their products as license fees."<sup>16</sup> Refusing in 1903 to pay this claim of the Selden interests, Mr. Ford carried on the fight against their demands, and, in 1909 after six years of litigation, had an adverse decision rendered him. He would not accept the verdict as a defeat. The struggle from that time on was to be almost single handed. He appealed the case to the higher tribunal, and in January, 1911, the final decree was handed down and the earlier decision was reversed. He was declared

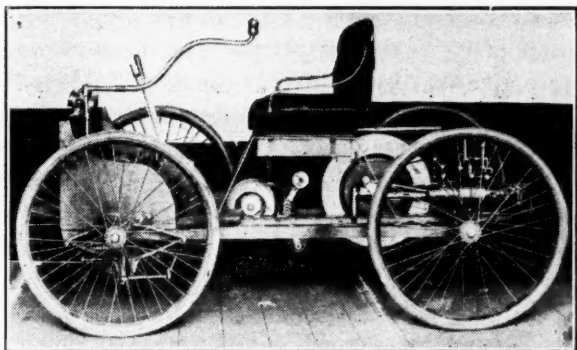
<sup>14</sup>*Trade Journal*, Dec. 1, 1924.

<sup>15</sup>*Ford Industries*, 1924.

<sup>16</sup>*Encyclopædia Britannica*, Vol. XVIII.

not to be an infringer, and his victory at last was complete.<sup>17</sup> It would be impossible to estimate the value of the outcome upon industry in this new freedom, but it most assuredly placed an entirely new aspect on the whole situation.

From the time of that victory to the present the Ford interests have grown by leaps and bounds. But while this wonder-



First Ford Car

ful growth may seem to the casual observer as almost miraculous, it has been the result of a great vision nurtured through the years by careful, well-laid plans, all tending towards a definite end. For it is the aim of the Ford Motor Co. to own and control extended sources of raw materials which enter into the construction of their cars, to control also the transportation of that material to their plants, and finally to manufacture all the parts which enter into the completed product. As means to that end witness their ownership of vast timber lands and mines in the upper peninsula of Michigan, coal mines in West Virginia and Kentucky, glass factories at Glassmere, Pa., and the Toledo and Ironton R. R. as well as ocean-going ships to handle the transportation of materials and products. The railroad is being fully electrified and powerful engines are built in the Ford factories. The large steamships come direct to the company's own docks at the River Rouge

<sup>17</sup>*Trade Journal*, 1924.

plant to take on their loads at the least possible expense. To further facilitate production and enable the company to reduce the cost of their cars to the ultimate consumer to the very lowest figure, a glass plant has been built, and the first unit of what will ultimately be the largest steel mills in the world has actually been constructed and is now in operation at the River Rouge plant.

And to the visitor going through this vast industrial enterprise at either of its two huge plants everything moves along with almost incredible speed and smoothness. Theirs is the last word in efficiency in modern business methods from the moment the raw materials enter their shops until the finished cars are finally inspected and marketed to all parts of the world. And the keynote to the success of this business is standardization of parts and mass production. That is why Mr. Ford continues to produce in ever growing numbers (now about two million per year) his "universal car," and to meet the popular demand for a good, low-priced medium of transportation, in the face of most keen competition. A fine illustration of this industrial efficiency may be had from the fact that "ore coming into the company's docks at 8 A. M. on Monday can be marketed as a complete Ford car by noon of the following Wednesday, allowing fifteen hours for the shipment of the vehicle." And it must be borne in mind that the price of the recent models compare favorably with those of 1913, even in the face of much higher cost of both labor and materials which enter into their construction.

Good evidence of the enormity of this business may be found when one considers the pay roll of the company for one year. During 1924 the total amount of the two plants at Highland Park and River Rouge was \$172,820,145.66, while the grand total of the organization was \$253,001,528.37.<sup>18</sup> Again, the cost of the Traffic department is worthy of careful consideration. During this same year \$134,000,000 was paid to transportation companies alone, and, "if we add dealers' freight, plant transportation costs, and inbound shipments sold f. o. b.

<sup>18</sup>*M. M. and F. Record*, Mar. 7, 1925.

Detroit", the amount will undoubtedly reach \$175,000,000. This probably rates the corporation as one of the largest shippers in the world.

One other fact is significant, and that is the care with which details are worked out by this organization. Mr. Ford owns a large jewel mine at Danbury, N. H. Here is the richest known deposit of garnet crystals in the world. The garnet rock crops out of the hillside and dynamite must be used to first break it up. Garnet runs as high as 85 to every 100 pounds of rock quarried. This is very valuable as an abrasive, and after being crushed to powder, is used for polishing glass.<sup>19</sup>

Finally, Mr. Ford's idea of social justice and responsibility deserve mention as a means of realizing the "Ford idea" in industry.<sup>20</sup>

- 1—The minimum wage. This was increased in Jan. 1914, to \$5.00 daily. Now it is \$6.00, and the average wage per day, of course is much higher.
- 2—The application of the eight hour day idea. This company was one of the first to establish this principle in modern industry.
- 3—Reduction to absolute minimum of Sunday work at all plants.
- 4—Institution of various educational opportunities for men of all ages. The Ford Trade School enrolls as high as 4000 students at various times during the year.
- 5—Various systems of "humanly helpful assistance to meet emergencies."
- 6—The employees investment system. This often yields as high as 14 per cent annually, with millions invested.

The application of such principles has made possible the company's boast that it never has had a strike, nor even the threat of one. This is a most commendable record indeed.

Only recently, December 2, 1927, the Ford Motor Co. presented its latest creation to the traveling public. In the place of the famous "Model T" which has served so long and so well,

<sup>19</sup>*M. M. and F. Record*, Dec. 26, 1925.

<sup>20</sup>*Ford Industries*, 1924.

and the production of which is now to be discontinued, there has been evolved an entirely new car to be known as "Model A." This shows some marked changes over the old model at approximately the same price to the consumer. It is altogether too soon after its appearance to judge of its real significance, but it seems to mark a new epoch in automobile production. Representing an initial outlay of \$100,000,000, and a promised expenditure in wages and material for 1928 in the neighborhood of \$800,000,000, the effect upon the business world already has been very stimulating. Since the appearance of the new model, prices of many other makes have been materially reduced. Truly in "Model A" Mr. Ford is about to witness the culmination of many of his early ideals. It is the personification of the "Ford idea" in industry.

The production of tractors as a rapidly growing phase of the industry must not be overlooked. It is only recently that Michigan farmers have begun to utilize this tool, and it is now growing in favor. The great foreign field is as yet almost untouched. Russia, revitalized industrially, is just beginning to demand tractors on her vast expanse of agricultural lands. The first sale of these machines was made in August, 1924, and since that time 10,000 Fordsons have been shipped to Russia alone.<sup>21</sup> Who shall say what the future in the foreign trade has in store for the Michigan manufacturer, since South America and even Africa have begun already to include passenger cars as well as tractors in their list of future needs.

Furthermore, the foundation for a great bus industry in Michigan is now being laid. There are at least eight companies in the commonwealth today actually engaged in the manufacture of motor coaches and trucks. Conspicuous among these are the Gotfredson, the Standard, the Federal, and the Graham truck companies of Detroit, and the Reo of Lansing, the Union of Bay City, the Mason of Flint, and the Republic of Alma.<sup>22</sup> Their future is made brighter by the phenomenal progress here and elsewhere in the building of good roads.

<sup>21</sup>*M. M. and F. Record*, Dec. 21, 1925.

<sup>22</sup>*M. M. and F. Record*, Mar. 21, 1925.

And it is in connection with this development that a serious problem has arisen as to the future of the railroads (both steam and electric), in America. But the motor vehicles seem to have come to stay and adjustments to meet the new situation must be made regardless of what the cost may be.

The automobile industry draws heavily upon a wide range of materials. Some are very common and more easily obtainable than others. The following is a list of such which ordinarily enter into the construction of automobiles: gold, platinum, diamonds, tungsten, graphite, iron, steel, molybdenum, cadmium, copper, brass, tin, zinc, nickel, lead, antimony, coal, clay, porcelain, cement, sand, gravel, lime, grease, oils, chemicals, cotton, wool, silk, jute, rope, hair, leather, lumber, glass, enamel, duco, cellulose, paint, varnish, and rubber.<sup>23</sup>

The interesting story of a quarter century of industrial growth is not without its tragedy after all. For while many businesses have survived and prospered, many others have gone down in the maelstrom of heartless competition. We are told that altogether fully "twelve hundred automobile manufacturing concerns have become extinct during the past twenty-five years, and a company in Detroit making a business of liquidating such failures has had fully nine hundred pass through its hands."<sup>24</sup> Undoubtedly most of these concerns were pioneers, but they point out some of the bitter lessons of experience.

The question often arises as to the future of the industry, and whether it has yet reached the saturation point in car production. If so, can any further expansion programs be carried out, or must all companies content themselves with mere replacement of vehicles in existence? Of course the answer will not be readily found, for it depends, to a very large extent, upon the solution of many of the perplexing problems which we are facing today, such as transportation, car parking and city development, readjustment of rural life, and individual health and happiness. It is, however, interesting to

<sup>23</sup>*Ibid*, Jan. 23, 1926.

<sup>24</sup>*Literary Digest*, LXXXV, 72.

observe the attitude of the leading builders themselves. According to a recent survey of the *Automobile Daily News*,<sup>25</sup> the future is full of promise, and the plans of the leaders for the past season included reasonably large expansion programs. Well in the lead in this activity comes the Ford Motor Co. of Detroit, which announced a three year plan of \$100,000,000, of which \$35,000,000 was spent in 1926 and a much larger amount expended during 1927. The Hudson Motor Car Co. of Detroit planned to spend \$10,000,000 during the year in extension of facilities at the plant. Dodge Bros. Inc. is just winding up an \$8,000,000 expansion program which will greatly increase their output for the present season. And other concerns, notably the Buick and the Chevrolet, have made very definite and extended arrangements for the future. The latter in particular has recently announced a schedule, as before stated, which will measurably increase their car production.

Finally, Dr. Klein, Director of the Federal Bureau of Foreign and Domestic Commerce, assures us that the future outlook, with special reference to the export trade, is bright indeed. He declares that "every indication is that this remarkable advance will continue," and that this is "largely because of the general improvement of world economic conditions, the lowered price of our automobiles, the inability of most European producers to satisfy demand and the exploitation of hitherto undeveloped markets, stimulated in several important instances by the Department of Commerce." He further adds that the "outstanding examples of increased purchases of American automobiles in 1925 over 1924 are: Belgium, 36 per cent; Denmark, 700 per cent; Norway, 30 per cent; Brazil, 154 per cent; and the United Kingdom, 260 per cent."<sup>26</sup> While the export trade for 1927 would not show any increase the plans of the Ford Motor Co. call for greatly augmented business for the British Isles and a million dollar plant in Japan to be erected at once. Certainly here is cause

<sup>25</sup>*M. M. and F. Record*, Dec. 5, 1925.

<sup>26</sup>*M. M. and F. Record*, Jan. 9, 1926.

for gratification for past accomplishments and for reflection upon the possibilities of the future, although the extreme prediction of 51,000,000 cars in the United States by 1975, printed recently in one of the state's leading dailies, may not be realized.<sup>27</sup>

Probably in no other way has the influence of the automobile been as direct and significant of achievement as it has upon the development of the highway system of the State. The modern era of good roads in Michigan is practically identical with that of the growth of the auto industry. In fact it was the latter which caused the insistent and continued demand for better roads. And the story has been the same in every state in the Union. This perhaps, warrants brief mention at this time.

As one travels today with speed and comfort over the magnificent system of highways which cover our State, the mind reverts to an earlier day when even short journeys were often most tortuous. The ox-team and the stage coach were common means of locomotion. One such journey from Ann Arbor to Kalamazoo was recorded in 1841.<sup>28</sup> The distance of 105 miles, which now may be covered in a few hours over a trunk line paved road, was then described as "a very tedious ride" requiring "twenty-six hours by stage coach for the trip." And of course this road was one of the best of which the State could boast, being the main artery of travel from Detroit westward.

In contrast with the expenditure for construction and upkeep of the highways of the United States at the beginning of the century the cost of that item today seems enormous. According to the Report of the Highway Engineers for 1924, we were spending twenty years ago "less than \$75,000,000 a year on the public highways of the United States. Today we are spending over a billion dollars a year."<sup>29</sup> And one of the chief reasons for this increase may be found in Federal legislation. As early as 1916 the Federal Aid Act was passed,

<sup>27</sup>*Detroit News*, Nov. 22, 1925.

<sup>28</sup>L. B. Swan, *Journal of a Trip to Michigan in 1841*, p. 20.

<sup>29</sup>*Proceedings Tenth Conference Highway Engineers*, XXVI, No. 13, Ann Arbor, Feb. 11, 1924.

with supplementary legislation in 1921, which appropriated a total of \$540,000,000. This was to be available in the several states upon their application, and subsequent action in similar appropriations. This was intended as the nucleus of a fund which would ultimately give America a vast system of 170,000 miles of super trunk line highways and connecting roads. Only half of the burden of financing such a project was to be borne by the Federal government, while the various states were expected to assume the remainder. Pursuant to these plans we are now beginning to realize their fulfillment.

Michigan has shared very fully in this new program. In the Report of the State Highway Commissioner for 1924,<sup>30</sup> the State, with the aid of the counties was credited with maintaining some 6,500 miles of Federal Aid and trunk line roads, which to date has been considerably increased. The State's share in this undertaking is being met by automobile fees. By July 1, 1924, Federal Aid allotted to Michigan amounted to \$13,652,947.24. Then \$2,226,824.73 was added in the fiscal year of 1925, making a total of \$15,879,772. At present more than one-third of the roads in the State, or better than 2,500 miles, is covered with hard surface. This places us in the front rank of highway construction.

In many other ways today the effect of the automobile is being felt. American life is being revolutionized by this new industry. We are only upon the threshold of a new era. Old ideas are being fast displaced by the new, and we are almost dizzy in the process.

Farm life has felt the force of these swift economic changes. New and improved methods in agriculture; nearness to the city and hence a better market for products on account of the automobile and the truck; a constantly changing labor problem because a large number of men are being drawn to the cities for higher wages; these are some of the phases of the new day on the farm, and they are bringing mingled joy and sadness to many of its owners and tenants. Let us note one fact here

---

<sup>30</sup>*Tenth Biennial Report, State Highway Com'r, 121, Lansing, 1924.*

in particular, the horse, once the mainstay and pride of agriculture, is now rapidly disappearing. In fact to see one today upon our public roads arouses considerable curiosity. One ambitious writer has done some figuring to prove that "the horse has no place in the economic scheme of the twentieth century."<sup>31</sup> According to these calculations, "it has required the total annual yield of 100,000,000 acres of our best farm lands to feed our horses each year for the past thirty! It has required 40 per cent of our grain crop! It has required the entire yield of 20,000,000 acres of hay land. The horse has eaten annually about 30 per cent of our hay!" He points out further that the "elimination of the horse will mean a direct saving of \$2,000,000,000 a year as well as tremendous improvement in other ways," and that this horse feed will then be available for cattle, hogs, and other live stock.

Then in our rapidly expanding suburban life the mighty force of these new factors is daily felt and appreciated. In the labor problems of the throbbing factories; in the need for regulation of parking upon and use of our city streets; and in the pressing need for solution of many questions concerning the health and happiness of the city dweller, evidence is not wanting to impress us with the significance of modern life and the part that the auto plays in that order. Here it is that the yearly increase in the toll of human lives, largely due to the auto, is so appalling. Here, and upon our highways, 5,700 children and 13,300 adults were killed during 1924, and the number of people injured exceeded 450,000, or twice the number of dead and wounded in the American army overseas. Throughout the land we are horrified daily by the number of hold-ups, bank robberies, and cases of bootlegging, nearly all of which are made possible by the use of the automobile.<sup>32</sup> But the fight for safer motoring is on, and an awakened public conscience will demand new safeguards for its protection against crime in the future.

<sup>31</sup>J. R. Doolittle, *Romance of the Automobile Industry*, p. 436.

<sup>32</sup>*Bulletin—National Bureau Casualty and Surety Underwriters*, quoted in the *Literary Digest*, LXXXV, 66.

The tragic is but one side of the picture. While this may be part of the price paid for our new freedom, there is another and brighter side which more than compensates for all the darkness. This is the realization of better health which comes from higher standards in our daily life. And who shall say how much this may mean to posterity?

## LITTLE JOURNEYS IN JOURNALISM

---

### WILBERT H. GUSTIN

By C. S. THOMAS

BAY CITY

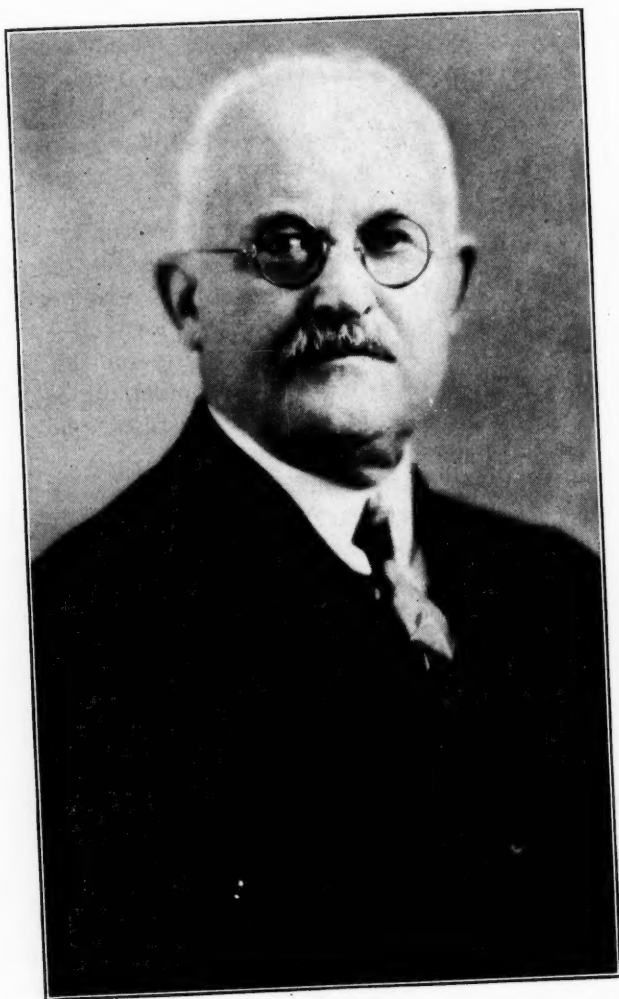
**W**ILBERT H. GUSTIN, dean of Saginaw valley newspapermen, closed his earthly career on June 16, 1927. With a record of 50 years of newspaper work—years devoted solely to the profession which he loved so well—years filled with every effort to the last of his ability for the betterment of the city in which he lived and for mankind, he passed to that reward which we all believe awaits those who well serve their fellow man and their Master.

During his long years of active newspaper work he always held that his first duty was to his newspaper, but when demands of duty and appeals to the heart clashed—as they often do in newspaper offices—he was the sympathetic friend and the wise adviser with the result that the heart call very often won out over cold duty, provided no public interest suffered thereby.

Next to his duty to his newspaper Mr. Gustin put duty to his home town, Bay City. In fact, the two were so closely interwoven in his mind that it would be difficult to draw a line separating them.

He had a high ideal for Bay City, and he fought to have that ideal realized. He wanted it to be, not necessarily bigger, but always better. The fact that some proposition was popular or unpopular did not swerve him. He always advocated what he believed was the proper thing for his home town, and although sometimes temporarily on the losing side, he lived to see his judgment justified in practically every important matter.

Among such subjects in more recent years were the high school proposition, once defeated and later adopted; and the



W. H. GUSTIN

commission form of government, which went through a similar course.

Bert Gustin was a newspaper man. In the newspaper office lay his life, his work, his joy. To the great bulk of the public the newspaper is an impersonal thing. When it speaks it is as a newspaper—not as a person. But it is the personality back of the newspaper which guides it on that pathway which makes it great or small, respected or hated and feared.

As editor of *The Times Tribune* Mr. Gustin's aim was always at a high standard of life. He worked for that which was for the good of humanity, he fought all that he believed was evil. He was patient with the foibles of his fellow beings but unsparing in his condemnation of wrongdoing. He was kindly to the poor and lowly, to all who were suffering, but had no use for fake or sham and the person or interest which sought his influence to further personal gain at the expense of others received short shrift at his hands.

Every big man has two interests—one his business and the other his home and family. Sometimes the two are rivals, but not with Mr. Gustin. His family life was of that type which we would like to believe exists in every American family. There was love for home and love for each other, thoughtfulness, carefulness and thorough understanding.

Among those of us who worked with him—some for almost a life time—there always existed a perfect friendship, and a comradeship the memory of which we all shall cherish as long as we live.

Mr. Gustin was born in Vienna, Ontario, Sept. 6, 1860. His parents, Mr. and Mrs. H. A. Gustin moved to Kawkawlin about 1865, where H. A. Gustin was connected with the Ballou lumber interests. The family moved to Bay City a few years later. In 1891 Wilbert married Miss Harriet Cumming, who survives him, with their three children.

Mr. Gustin's first newspaper work was done as a schoolboy in the village of Kawkawlin, when he sent the usual grist of village news to *The Bay City Tribune*. Later the family moved to Bay City and at the age of 16 he started on his real

career as a journalist in the capacity of reporter on the *Tribune*. Two years later he was made city editor of that paper and he continued to hold that position for almost ten years.

Late in 1889 he resigned to engage in the business for himself. Fred M. Van Campen had been publishing *The West Bay City Times* for several months on the west side of the river. Mr. Gustin and Leonard L. Cline associated themselves with Mr. Van Campen, moved the paper to the east side and started *The Bay City Times*.

It made the third daily paper in the city, the others being *The Bay City Tribune* and *The Bay City Evening Press*, both published in the same plant, E. T. Bennett controlling the *Tribune* and being joint owner of the evening paper, with Archibald McMillan, father of City Attorney A. H. McMillan, who was the editor. With the advent of the new daily the *Evening Press* gradually lost prestige and Mr. McMillan, about a year later sold his interest in the *Press* and became a part owner and editor of the *Times*. A year and a half later the *Evening Press* was purchased and united with the *Times* under the name of *The Times Press* and the paper had the evening field to itself thereafter with the exception of one or two attempts to start evening dailies, none of which existed for more than a few weeks.

During the early years *The Times* and *Times Press* saw many changes among the stockholders. F. M. Van Campen was the first to retire. L. L. Cline left about a year later and Frank Zagelmeyer became a stockholder and business manager. Then Frank C. (Cap) Merrill became a stockholder, E. T. Bennett, who had lost the *Tribune*, was a member of the company for a time, but soon retired. Mr. Zagelmeyer sold out after being with the paper about three years, but in all these changes Bert Gustin retained his faith in and his love for the first newspaper venture in which he was financially interested.

He continued as city editor of the *Times Press* until the death of Archibald McMillan, when he became the editor.

In 1903 *The Times Press* was purchased by Bernard M. Wynkoop and others, and for a time Mr. Gustin ceased to be financially interested in the paper but continued as its editor. Later the Booth Publishing Co. was organized and he again became a stockholder in the enterprise.

In 1916 *The Bay City Tribune* was consolidated with the *Times Press* and the name of *The Bay City Times Tribune* was adopted.

Thus, after about 27 years, Mr. Gustin did not exactly return to his first newspaper love, but that love came back to him.

Mr. Gustin was always a hard worker. Hours meant nothing to him if there was something to do for the newspaper. No task was too irksome, no demand seemed to be too great, so long as they meant "news" for the paper with which he was connected and for the public to read. He expected the same service from his fellow workers and many young reporters who worked under him and then went to other newspapers owe much of their advancement to this training which he gave them.

The life of Bert Gustin exemplified that fine precept by Emerson: "Work in every hour, paid or unpaid, see only that thou work, and thou canst not escape the reward; whether thy work be fine or coarse, planting corn or writing epics, so only it be honest work done to thine own approbation, it shall earn a reward to the senses as well as to the thought; no matter how often defeated, you are born to victory."

## HISTORY OF THE MICHIGAN STATE FEDERATION OF WOMEN'S CLUBS

### PLANNING AN ENDOWMENT FUND. TENTH ANNIVERSARY

BY IRMA T. JONES

LANSING

THE second term of Mrs. Belle M. Perry ended with the eighth annual meeting of the Michigan State Federation of Women's Clubs, held in Muskegon, October 14, 15, 16, 1902. Josephine M. Gould, first vice president with Mrs. Perry was not in attendance at the meeting on account of illness in her family at her home in Owosso. October 16 this ex-vice-president was surprised by a telegram from an Owosso delegate at Muskegon. The message said, "My congratulation upon your election to Presidency: send acceptance immediately. Can you come this afternoon for Board meeting tomorrow morning?"

Being in line of succession, the practice of electing the first vice-president to succeed to the Presidency, had prevailed as heretofore. Loyal club friends stood for the candidacy of the vice-president's promotion. A message of acceptance and a promise to meet the newly elected officers on the afternoon of Oct. 17 was forwarded.

With much trepidation at the thought of what the acceptance implied, the new president reached Muskegon, and there for the first time met her "Cabinet"—a group of women whose loyalty to duty never swerved and whose friendliness is a cherished memory.

The following women constituted the official Board for the year 1902-1903. President—Mrs. Josephine M. Gould, Owosso; First Vice President—Mrs. Lois L. Felker, Grand Rapids; Second Vice President—Mrs. Lucy F. Andrews, Three Rivers; Recording Secretary—Mrs. Ida A. Marks, Detroit; Corresponding Secretary—Miss Grace Louise Robbins, Benton Harbor; Treasurer—Mrs. Frances Wheeler Smith, Hastings; Directors

—Mrs. Ellen M. Nims, Muskegon; Mrs. Ella Warren Gordon, Howell; Mrs. Lecia D. Strachan, Sault Ste. Marie; Mrs. Harriet C. M. Rosenbury, Bay City; General Federation Secretary —Mrs. Pamela A. Wilsey, Caro.

At that time the several departments of work of the Federation were: Club Organization, Education, Reciprocity and Art, Legislative and Industrial, Forestry and Town Improvement, Printing, Badge Pin, Lucinda Hinsdale Stone Memorial Committee. The first work of the Board of Managers was therefore the appointment of standing committees for these several departments together with Program and Local Arrangement Committees for the Annual meeting of October, 1903.

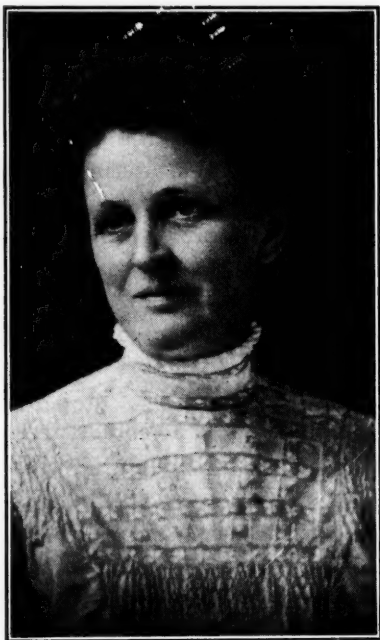
The invitation of the Ladies Literary Club of Grand Rapids to hold the annual convention of 1903 in the city of Grand Rapids having been already accepted, the appointment of these various committees occupied the most of the time of the first Board meeting.

To secure the acceptance of the committees thus selected was the first duty of the president and to fill such vacancies as might result from appointees declining to serve. This took considerable time, but the outcome was happy, for very efficient chairmen and committees accepted their several appointments and faithfully discharged their duties in the several departments of Federation service.

At this time the State Federation had a membership of 138 clubs. Eighteen additional were received during the year 1903, making a total of 156 clubs at the close of the first year of this administration, with a membership approximately, 10,450. Eighteen individual clubs belonged to the General Federation.

Five County Federations were recorded, viz: Cass, Eaton, Oakland, St. Joseph and Van Buren. The Cass County Federation was organized by Mrs. Lucy F. Andrews of revered memory, at Marcellus, April 18, 1902. Four of the County Federations were organized in 1902 sometime before the convention at Muskegon. Van Buren County had been organized for some six years, being probably the oldest County Federation in the State.

The names of all committees and officers of County federations may be found in the year book for 1902-1903. Of City Federations there were now seven, viz: Detroit, Flint, Grand Rapids, Hillsdale, Lansing, Manchester and Saginaw. The



MRS. BELLE M. PERRY.

object of these wheels within wheel of federation is in the main unification for intellectual culture and sympathetic action or through united effort to secure strength for effecting municipal reform, philanthropy and for civic improvement.

Happy social events where friend meets friend were not lost sight of by these various organizations. From the time early in this administration when citizens of Owosso honored her by a pleasant social gathering, there were many beautiful occasions where the president was a guest through whom the Michigan State Federation was honored by pleasant courtesies shown to their leader through two terms of office.

By invitation of the president, the midyear Board meeting was held at Owosso, April 1 and 2. The entire Board was present at this meeting. According to custom, plans were made at this time for the annual meeting in Grand Rapids, the following October. Reports were given by officers and chairmen of committees and much routine and miscellaneous business transacted. The Owosso Current Topic Club and The Woman's Club were hostess clubs, the members entertaining in their homes and at a reception given at the residence of Mr. and Mrs. Albert Todd with the visiting Clubwomen guests of honor. A large number of citizens paid their respects to the visiting officers of the Michigan State Federation of Women's Clubs.

At the beginning of this administration, eleven clubs owned club houses. Tuesday, February 17, 1903, the Muskegon Woman's Club and their friends dedicated the 12th. Their beautiful new building was the gift of one of their members, Mrs. Francis Smith. Three other members, Mesdames Julia Hackley, Mary L. Temple and Florence A. T. Irwin gave a lot, that through the use of another lot was afterward converted into an endowment fund to which A. V. Mann added a substantial sum. It was the president's pleasure to accept an invitation of the Muskegon Woman's Club and to bear some small part in the exercises of dedication, as well as to attend the reception given at the new club house in the evening of the same date.

During the session of the State Legislature, the Senate committee on State Affairs, gave audience to a delegation of club women, Mesdames Frances E. Burns of St. Louis, W. H. Pound of Lansing, Belle M. Perry of Charlotte, Clara A. Avery of Detroit, J. C. Burrows of Kalamazoo, E. L. Devereaux and Josephine M. Gould of Owosso, urging the passage of a bill providing for the appointment of women on each of several Boards of Control of State Institutions where women or girls are detained. Mrs. Pound of Lansing was the principal speaker in urging that the bill should become a law. Mrs. Pound won the earnest consideration of the Senate committee

by her fine presentation of the question. Other club representatives took up the argument "with skill" as a reporter stated. The president of the Federation closed the session in answering the senator who opposed the bill.

An important achievement in 1903 was raising three thousand of a five thousand dollar scholarship; the income of this sum invested to be loaned to needy young women in our State University. The plan was first proposed by Miss Clara A. Avery at the annual meeting at Muskegon. It was to be a memorial scholarship honoring Mrs. Lucinda H. Stone, the first advocate of co-education in our country, and head of a Seminary for young women located in Kalamazoo some years ago. To promote the plan, a committee composed of Clubwomen who at sometime had been students of Mrs. Stone, was appointed; Mrs. Lucy F. Andrews, Three Rivers, Chairman; other members were Mrs. Juliet Goodenow, Kalamazoo; Mrs. Alice Phelps Thomas, Caro; Miss Clara A. Avery, Detroit; Miss Ellen Morrison, Grand Rapids. This committee was tireless, especially Miss Avery, in their efforts to raise this fund and were so far successful that three of the five thousand dollars pledged was collected and paid into the Treasury of the Michigan University January 11, 1904. This was by resolution adopted at Grand Rapids in 1903.

By invitation of the Twentieth Century Club of Detroit, on its President's Day, The State Federation was represented by its president, Mrs. Josephine Gould. Several members of the family of Mrs. Stone of revered memory were in attendance at this meeting and nearly all the members of the "Stone Memorial" Committee. The meeting was held in the Twentieth Century Clubhouse October 14, 1903. This was an occasion of much interest and helpful in promoting enthusiasm for speedily completing the scholarship fund.

During her first term the president was able to accept many invitations to visit clubs in different parts of the State. The memory of those visits is brightened by many cordial words of welcome, gracious hospitality extended and the revelation of interesting work done by the clubs visited.

The crowning event of the year to a loyal club member is the annual convention. An invitation from the Ladies' Literary Club of Grand Rapids, with the cordial approval of all other women's clubs of that city, to hold the 9th annual convention of the State Federation of Women's Clubs in that city had been received and accepted at Muskegon. The time fixed for the meeting was October 13, 14, 15, 1903; the place of meeting was the Fountain St. Church. Mrs. Della Foote Perkins, chairman of the Local Arrangement committee had attended the April meeting of the Executive Board in Owosso where needful plans were arranged.

Tuesday, October 13, when the President arrived in Grand Rapids, she found awaiting her the card of the president of the Ladies' Literary Club, the lamented Mrs. Sherwood Hall, bearing the words, "Welcome and Success." During the entire convention the Presidents and members of the several Grand Rapids Clubs were untiring in efforts for the comfort and pleasure of their guests,—members of the Executive Board and delegates representing the associated clubs of the Michigan State Federation.

The General Federation was represented at this meeting by Mrs. Robert J. Burdette of Pasadena, California, at that time one of the Vice-presidents of the General Federation, whose charming presence and wise counsel added greatly to the interest of the convention.

The music throughout the convention was of a high order and thoroughly enjoyed. The principal address of the evening session of Tuesday was an illustrated lecture, "Tolstoi, the Man and his Russia," by the Reverend Lee S. McCollester of Detroit. It was listened to with deep interest.

Wednesday forenoon was given to reports of officers and the President's address in which she briefly reviewed the work accomplished and offered suggestions for future effort. The Program and the Year book for 1902-3 are sufficient memoranda of the convention. Mrs. Emma A. Fox of Detroit, second vice-president of the General Federation of Women's Clubs, was the principal speaker of Wednesday afternoon, her sub-

ject—Parliamentary Problems—had a practical interest for many delegates. "A New Law and What we can Do with it," was the theme of a stirring address by Rev. Caroline Bartlett Crane. The principal evening lecture was given by Prof. Isaac N. Demmon, LL.D., Professor of Rhetoric and Literature, University of Michigan. Mrs. Robert Burdette in her own bright, interesting way gave her address on "The Care of the Junior Citizen,—a Plea for the Betterment of Child Life."

Several clubs gave receptions at their club houses between the afternoon and evening sessions where visiting delegates were welcomed and entertained. The attractive club houses were an inspiration to delegates to go home and urge building by their respective clubs, this being really the first time they had awakened to the need and value of club houses.

The forenoon of October 15 was spent mainly in electing officers, most of the former officers being re-elected. At this time Mrs. Emma A. Fox of Detroit was elected State Parliamentarian, and Mrs. Ida Marks was chosen State Correspondent to the *Club Woman*, the official organ of the General Federation of Women's Clubs.

The principal address of the afternoon was given by Dean Myra B. Jordan of the State University. Her subject "The Relation of the University to the Community," was of great interest to many women present, especially to those whose daughters were prospective students of the State University. Mrs. Marie B. Ferrey of Lansing gave a bright paper on "Clubs," and Mrs. Homeria Bouton Sowers of Benton Harbor closed the afternoon program with a paper on "Originality."

The Convention closed with a reception to the officers and delegates by local clubs at the Ladies' Literary Club House.

Total receipts for the year, \$573.27; Disbursements, \$398.72; Balance in treasury at close of 1903, \$174.55.

At this convention, 130 of the 156 clubs composing the Federation were represented by delegates. The number of clubs in the General Federation was 16. Twenty-seven clubs owned libraries. The number of clubs doing philanthropic work had steadily increased since the founding of the State Federation.

## THE FOLK OF OUR TOWN

(A story of Walled Lake, Michigan)

BY HENRY O. SEVERANCE

(Librarian, University of Missouri)

Illustrations by Will H. Collins

(Assistant Librarian)

(Continued from the January Number)

THE business of our town centered about the Town Pump. To the east was the tavern; to the west was the "Store," a building about forty by sixty feet. The back end of the store was on the ground level, the front end about four feet up due to the slope of the land, which necessitated six or eight steps to get upon the front porch. A buggy could drive alongside this platform and discharge its passengers on the floor level of the store. Steve Gage was the storekeeper, a young man, cordial and likable, cheerful, democratic in his tastes. He treated everybody with a smile and spoke words of cheer and welcome. Even the children were fond of him. He kept for sale a little of everything a villager might want.

As one entered the door he was greeted with the odors of roast coffee, plug tobacco, molasses, salt fish, etc. At his right he saw the "Post Office",—a case of pigeon holes with a glass front and a few locked boxes resting on the counter. Many of the villagers got their mail in the general delivery. Beyond the post office case, the counter extended about fifteen feet and carried the scales, sacks of flour and corn meal which were piled high. On the shelves back of the counter were the spices, extracts, canned goods, tobaccos, groceries; in barrels behind the counter were the white sugar, the crackers, the salt. Table salt, such as "It pours when it rains," was not on the market; everybody used dairy salt which came in barrels. In the rear of the store were the barrels of New Orleans molasses, syrup, vinegar, kerosene oil, placed side down on boxes with spiggots in the heads for drawing off their contents.

On the left you saw another counter covered with a show case exhibiting combs and other toilet articles; and beside this case a special thread case containing a variety of spools of Corticelli thread of various sizes with the "forties" and "sixties" predominating. Bolts of calico were piled on the counter as well as on the shelves back of it; shelves were groaning with calicoes, sheeting, cotton flannels, socks, handkerchiefs, mittens, gloves, straw hats, caps and the like. In front of the counter was the box of boots and arctic overshoes. Tubs, washboards, kettles, pans and brooms were in the rear. Yonder was the stove, placed about two-thirds of the way back in the room; around it, boxes, barrels, and two or three chairs where neighbors might sit to rest and to spin yarns and retail gossip. The "store" and the cobbler's shop were the social centers of the town for men. The men who were incapacitated for work, those who had retired from work, and those who were living on incomes and others who came for the mail would drop in and talk with one another while waiting for the mail to be sorted and distributed in the boxes. R. S. Howard, Grandpa Gage, Jim Hoyt, the village farmer who took life rather moderately, Mr. Weaver, the man with the "greasy dollar" and George Welfare, the bachelor money lender, and young Jerome who married the daughter of a "well to do" farmer and who was full of jokes and stories, many of which could not be told in the presence of ladies,—all these and many others were to be found there from time to time.

On the next corner west of the general store was Jim Humphrey's "dry goods store" which carried a larger stock of calicoes, cotton flannels and the like, than Steve carried, but the sales were probably no larger than Steve's, who was more cordial and more generous in his weights and measures. The P. girls used to say that Steve's yard was usually an "inch longer" than Jim's. On the street—across from the Tavern on the lake front—was a hardware store which carried nails, plow shares, plow points, harness and harness fixtures, parts for the wagon, whiffle-trees, neck-yokes and the like, presided over by Bob Carnes, freckled faced and bow-legged. Next to

his store was the Pennell blacksmith shop, a brick building sufficiently large to take a team and wagon in. Mr. Pennell was a familiar figure to us all; stolidly built, about six feet tall, dirty face, brawny arms; he wore a leather apron,

And children coming home from school  
Looked in at the open door;  
They loved to see the flaming forge,  
And hear the bellows roar,  
And see the burning sparks that flew  
Like chaff from a threshing floor.

The blacksmith's larger business was horseshoeing, although he set many wagon tires and buggy tires, repaired parts to mowers, plows, wagons, buggies. We boys took keen interest in watching him hammer into shape the red hot horseshoes and hear them "sizz" as he dropped them in the tub of water which always stood near the anvil; we were fascinated with the bellows which blew life into the dying coals, and with the sparks that scattered about the shop when the smith struck the hot iron with his heavy sledge. Setting wagon tires was an interesting process. The blacksmith would place a segment of the tire in the coals of the forge, pull the bellows handle, then in a minute place the red hot segment on the anvil, beat it to shorten it, then try it on the felloes; if it fit, he would temper the steel by dipping it into the water, and then, while the steel was hot, he would slip it over the rim, the contraction of the steel tire as it cooled causing it to fit closely to the felloes all the way around.

Shoeing a horse was also interesting. The blacksmith would pick up a horse's hind foot, swing around with his back to the horse, bring the foot between his legs and hold it in his leather apron. Then he would clean the foot, removing all dirt, stones, and the like from the frog, then pare off the edges of the hoof and try a new shoe against the foot. Then releasing the foot he would go to the forge, place the shoe on the coals and apply the bellows; the shoe was soon hot; then he would shape it by hammering it flatwise, sidewise, and endwise; then fit it to the foot by holding the hot shoe against the hoof. If the shoe should fit he would nail it to the hoof, sending the

long nails out through the hoof an inch and a half above the shoes. These nails were long, flat, and sharp; protruding points were cut off, ends hammered into the hoof, then a coarse file was applied to smooth the hoof and the nails, and the job was done.

Next to the smithy was the cobbler shop.

Truly, sir, all that I live by is with the awl,  
I am indeed a surgeon to old shoes.

The cobbler of our town was a man of middle age, and average height, with sporadic growth of whiskers and a thin sorrel mustache. He was an intelligent man and kept himself well informed on the topics of the day and county and local affairs. He was a cripple; his legs were unequal in length, the right leg was lengthened to equal the left by adding layer upon layer of sole leather to the heel and sole of his right shoe. It was built up about four inches; even then he stepped down on his right leg and up on the left; so he walked with difficulty and could not walk many miles at a stretch. When he was a small boy he drove his father's team and wagon and one day something broke on the harness; he climbed over the dash-board and ran out on the tongue between the horses. The horses became frightened and ran away. He was picked up for dead. His legs and ribs were broken, but his neck and back were whole and his lungs and heart were going, so he was patched up, bandaged and put into a cast for several months. At the time I am writing about he had a wife and five children, and was able to work six days a week in his little shop across the street from the grocery and next to the Pennell blacksmith shop; it was on the lake shore, and the window from the back end overlooked Walled Lake. Near the center of the room was a wood heating stove; in the rear the cobbler's bench, the sewing machine, and supplies. The bench was about two feet high, on which were arrayed the awls, needles, knives, hammers, bristles, and lasts. A round hole about a foot in diameter was cut out of the bench and a leather seat fastened in. On the wall was the thread, waxed ends, and various tools; on the floor by the cobbler's feet was

the wooden bucket two-thirds full of water and under the bench the sole leather and the thin leather for patches on boots, shoes, and harness. Our cobbler made boots to order, good boots too, hand sewed and pegged. He kept some machine made boots for sale, also arctic overshoes, which were similar to our "galoshes." About the stove were three or four chairs for the customers while a patch was being sewed on or a sole pegged to the last, and for anybody who wished to spend an hour "swapping yarns."

The cobbler's father was a cobbler first and a farmer afterwards. Many of the pioneers had to know how to repair shoes for themselves and children. After the father moved west and settled in Michigan he became a farmer. Our cobbler was incapacitated for hard physical labor, followed his father's trade, perfected it and became a boot and shoe maker. It was fascinating to us boys to see the cobbler work. If he were to sew a patch on your boot, he would first cut off a piece of leather large enough to cover the hole, with ample margins, lay the patch on his lap-board and pare the edges thin with a sharp knife. Then he would make two waxed ends about two feet long by twisting a few threads and by pulling them over a cake of bees-wax until the threads were thoroughly coated. Then he would fasten a bristle on one end of each of the waxed ends and put the boot in a vice in order to hold the patch in place. With an awl he would pierce both patch and boot, insert a bristle from either side and draw them through so that only the end of the waxed thread would protrude. The sewing was a repetition of this process with the waxed ends being drawn in both directions through the holes. In the case of a new sole on an old pair of shoes, he would place a large strip of cowhide on his lap, set the boot down on it then mark the size, remove the boot and cut out a sole which he let slip into the pail of water where it remained for fifteen or twenty minutes to soften while he was sewing on a patch or doing something else. Then he would pull out the sole and hammer it flat on the lapidary. He would then slip a last into the boot, place the boot on his knees, sole up, and held down tightly by

a circular strap which passed over the instep and down under the cobbler's game foot. He drove a nail into the center of the sole, then two farther back and one near the front. A sharp gauge which had been run around the edge of the sole indicated the line for the wooden pegs. He was now ready for quick action. He had the awl with its straight short point in his left hand, the hammer in his right, wooden pegs in his mouth; now watch: the awl in place, struck by the hammer, released by the left hand which immediately selected a peg from the mouth, peg in place, struck in by the hammer; quick repetition produced a sole fastened by two rows of pegs around the sole about a quarter inch from the edge. He scraped the sole with a piece of broken glass until it was even with the edge of the old sole; then rubbed the edges with a wooden instrument, blackened and waxed so the two soles looked like one. This process is thus described by Whittier:

Rap, rap; upon the well worn stone  
How falls the polished hammer.  
Rap, rap; the measured sound has grown  
A quick and merry clamor.  
Now shape the sole, now deftly curl  
The glossy vamp around it.

Our cobbler was a social man, or his work would have been drudgery. He loved children and was pleased to have us boys and girls stop in to get our boots and shoes mended. He would tease and joke with us; when the older boys came, he would ask all about their best girls and when they were going to "propose." He enjoyed the men too; could peg shoes and talk at the same time. The "Woodward boys," twins about sixty years of age, would drop in and gossip an hour or more; they were so nearly alike that many of us could not tell which was John and which was Josh. They were rather stocky, with heavy iron gray beards; both wore heavy boots, black suits, and broad rimmed high crowned felt hats, and usually walked the mile and a half to town every afternoon. Josh said in the shop one day, "The young Doctor's wife and friend were driving around the lake today; when they came near me, she said:

'There comes one of the Woodward twins, their names are Josh and John but I can't tell which from tother.' I spoke up and says: 'I'm tother.'" Josh thought this was some joke. These afternoon conversations and the chatter of the boys and girls relieved the monotony of the cobbler's life and gave him pleasure. He was a churchman and was given to long prayers at prayer meeting; he was greatly peeved when one of the Elders in the midst of his prayer announced a hymn to be sung while Brother C. was finishing his prayer.



Dr. Chapman's Horse

Next the cobbler shop was the old saw mill which had been abandoned. Some of the machinery was still in place and several logs remained unsawed.

To the rear of the General Store about a hundred feet was the old Doctor's office. This was occupied by the young doctor who had taken over the old man's practice. Dr. Chapman was fresh from the medical school and inexperienced but the folk of our town and the countryside received him kindly. He strengthened his position by marrying the old Doctor's youngest daughter Carrie. She made many calls with him and brought cheer and comfort into many homes. A call by the

Doctor and his wife often did more for the patients than his bitter medicine. The old Doctor owned a little black mare which he had used in his practice, and which he gave to Dr. Chapman and his wife. The Doctor was known by his horse, a familiar figure throughout the countryside; her speed and endurance was tested again and again; the Doctor's practice was not large at first, and to create an impression that he had hurried calls, it is said, about ten in the forenoon and three in the afternoon he would rush from his office, jump into the buggy and start the little mare off at a 2:40 gate headed for the country. In a half hour he would return in haste. However this may be, his practice increased rapidly. He would go when called, rain or shine, night or day, cold or hot. In winter if he couldn't get through by sleigh he would go horseback. He soon added another horse, a nervous little fellow which would champ the bit and rear standing on his hind legs with his head and front legs in mid-air when the Doctor was about to start. When the front feet came to ground, he would start on a wild run, and the Doctor held a tight rein and let him run, sometimes five miles at a stretch.

The Doctor had more country calls in the later afternoon or night than at any other time of day. Sick people seem to get tired at the close of day and can't trust themselves to go through the night. In those days there were no phones. Somebody had to "go for the Doctor." One April there was a great snow storm; snow drifted into banks in the roads which became impassable. A mother of a desperately sick boy a mile and a half from town cut off by drifts despaired of seeing the Doctor, but by noon he appeared, horseback, medicine case on a strap over his shoulder. Many a night our folks were wakened by the sound of horses' hoofs and the rumble of a buggy on the frozen ground,—the Doctor coming home from a midnight or early morning drive into the country. Eugene, a young man of our town, who had been a year at the Normal school at Ypsilanti, contracted to sell a book during the summer months, "What Could a Woman Do?" After two weeks, without a sale, Eugene got discouraged and came home; if he

could get a doctor's certificate that he was ill, he could be relieved of his contract; so the Doctor gave him some pills and a statement that he was under the Doctor's care, which was true.

Our town claimed a lawyer, although he lived a mile out and practiced mostly in Pontiac. He would surely have starved on litigation in our town; there was only one case in these early days. Our citizens were law abiding, and had high regard for the rights of others, but one day Bob and the Butcher had an altercation; Bob was manager of the hardware store across the street from the Tavern. It happened that the Butcher owed Bob some money, about \$3, and wanted change for a \$10 bill; asked Steve in the General Store to give him change. Steve didn't have the change, so Bob, who was standing by, offered to change the bill for him. Bob took the \$10 bill and gave him the change less \$3 which the Butcher owed him.

Butcher: "Got to have all the change, will pay *you* later."

Bob: "I have waited a long time on you. I will keep the amount." Butcher: "Give me my money or I will swat you."

Bob: "I won't do it. You owe me this. I am going to keep it."

The Butcher let a right hander fall on Bob's right eye and knocked him out; then hunted up Lawyer Bateman and had Bob arrested for not returning his money; result, a case of Butcher vs. Bob for an "Act of Trover" in the Justice Court in the ball room of the Tavern the next week. Sentiment ran high; the ball room was filled; Lawyer Bateman had the case for the Butcher. He was a formidable looking man, keen eyes, hair combed straight back pompadour, confidence in himself and with the confidence of others in him. He questioned the Butcher's son, ten years of age:

"How old are you?"—"Ten years." "Where were you born?"—"St. Johns, Michigan."—"Is this your father?" (pointing to the Butcher). "He is supposed to be." "Now don't say he is supposed to be. Say Yes unless you have reason to believe someone else is your father." (much scared) "Y-es, sir."

"Were you in Steve's store on 20th day of June, 1877 at 3 o'clock in the afternoon?"—"Y-e-s, sir."—"Did you see your father give Bob a ten dollar bill?"—"Yes, sir."—"What did he say when he handed the bill to Bob?"—"Please give me change for this bill." The son went on to describe the quarrel. Other witnesses were called. The case was decided in favor of the Butcher. Bob had the costs to pay, the money to refund, the loss of the debt, and a good lesson.

Saturday afternoons were busy times in our town. Farmers from the country would come in for their mail, and groceries and meats and the like for Sunday and they would bring along their eggs and butter to sell. They were interesting men. Standing at the Town Pump one might have seen a cloud of dust in the west moving toward town, and out of the cloud a horse and buckboard burst forward at break neck speed; the driver reining in his horse at the Town Pump; not a runaway, but George Patton coming to town. George lived on the sand prairie toward Commerce where the farmers had to put rail fences on the land to keep it from blowing away. George was a reckless driver and cruel to his horses. One day he drove into town, watered his horse, turned round and headed west, struck his horse a heavy blow with the whip; she lunged forward, kicked herself loose from the buckboard and ran wild leaving the tyrant in the middle of the street surprised but unhurt.

From the west came also a good span of Percherons hitched to a lumber wagon with a top box surmounted by a spring seat. A small boy sat on the front edge of the seat, his feet resting on the front edge of the top box, driving the horses. He was less than four feet high. By his side sat a woman, tall, erect, feet on the inside of the box, who might have been taken for the boy's mother. When they came nearer to the Town Pump, behold, it was Bob MacKeever and his wife, known as the "long and the short of it!"

From Wixom way came Eddie the huckster. His old horses were skin and bones. Eddie sat on the spring seat behind, seeing the lines held in his wooden arm while he flourished

the whip in the right hand. On the wagon back of the seat were chicken crates, egg crates, and the like. Eddie would buy almost anything the farmer had to sell and take it to Detroit and sell it. He was always in a hurry, a nervous little man; he would rush from morning to night. His old horses couldn't stand the pressure. "Get ap! get ap here! get ap! go on!"



The Rag Man

were continually on his lips, and he would punctuate his exclamations with the whip on the bony backs. "Hurry up Eddie" wore himself out before he was 35; he mistook jazz for pep.

From the east came the rag man, Charley Smart, who bartered tinware for old rags which he collected for the paper mills in Ypsilanti. His high box wagon was equipped with doors on the sides which opened into compartments full of tin

basins, tin pails, tin cups, and tin utensils *ad infinitum*. The upper deck had an iron rail and was piled high with large gunny sacks full of rags; bags corded up making a load some six feet high above the box. He bought rags and paid for them in tinware. The rags were packed in bags which usually weighed about twenty-five pounds. Charley was different from most other "rag peddlers", honest and gave honest weight; he was a Christian peddler. He attended the Baptist prayer meetings on Wednesday nights when he happened to be in



The Wandering Pioneer of Trade

town, and after church he would put his arm around the "little deacon" and give him cheer, encouragement and advice, especially on living "the Christian life."

From the west also came the general peddler, "the wandering pioneer of trade." He looked like old Rip Van Winkle with his flowing hair and whiskers and rheumatic joints. His back was bent, his step slow. He carried a burden suspended from a rod about four feet long over his shoulder, on either end of which a wire was fastened and attached to a tin box. These boxes had covers and locks and handles so that the old man could relieve the weight on his shoulders by carrying the

weight or a part of it in his hands by grasping the handles and lifting up on the boxes. He went from town to town stopping where night overtook him; stopped at every house, set his boxes down, soldered the holes in the kitchen tinware and sold bars of lead and a bottle of acid for cleaning the tin, and the tools for soldering, to the boys of the family who thought they could make money by filling up holes in tin cups, basins, and the like for the neighbors. He sold also combs, tops, jewsharps, mouth organs, and various notions which the women bought to help the old man along. He stayed at the Butcher's one night after a long tramp; in the night his right leg began to cramp; he groaned and got out of bed. Mrs. B. called to him: "What's the matter Uncle Freeman?"—"I guess, I got a crack in my leg." It was more than that. This was "Uncle Freeman's" last trip.

(To be continued)

## VANISHED VILLAGES OF BERRIEN COUNTY

BY L. BENJ. REBER

ST. JOSEPH

**B**ERRIEN County has had its full quota of projected villages which either never materialized or died later from various causes. The history of these villages forms a pathetic tale of ruined hopes and wasted fortunes.

There was the village of Royalton, surveyed and platted with high hopes; only one lot was ever sold and even the tavern which formed the nucleus of the village fell into ruin and disappeared. Even to this day strangers sometimes inquire for the village, and occasionally mail comes to Berrien County addressed to Royalton. There was the village of Buckhorn which died a-borning, with never a lot sold or a building erected. It is interesting to note that Buckhorn is reviving, as lots are being sold and some buildings erected at present. There was the lumber village of Shanghai which got its name because the saw mill owner had an inordinate love for chicken but would eat only those of the Shanghai breed. There was the village of Bertrand which grew until there were nearly two thousand people; it had a large brick convent, a flourishing young ladies finishing school, many fine public buildings, two score retail stores, factories and commission warehouses. It has vanished utterly until there is even some little dispute as to its actual location.

However it is not of these we would speak but of the fascinating history of the succession of settlements which preceded our own beautiful city of Saint Joseph.

Saint Joseph is not the first, but the fourth, settlement to occupy practically the same terrain. The present city was preceded by three actual, flourishing settlements which successively disappeared.

In the late fall of 1679 came René Robert Cavalier de La Salle with a number of followers and landed at the mouth of the river. At that time the river curved around the foot of the bluff making another sharp curve about where the Pere Mar-

quette depot now stands, and from there cut through sand dunes to the Lake. LaSalle landed on the bluff and there built a fort, about where his monument now stands. Thither came his lieutenant with more men and supplies. While LaSalle was exploring farther south his men cleared land, built a mill and sawed out lumber for a ship. A year later came the Jesuits who established a mission and named it the mission of Saint Joseph, for the patron Saint of Canada. The mission became a place of refuge for broken tribes who sought to escape the vengeance of the fierce Iroquois. Fr. Marest, writing to his Superior in 1681, states that there were over two hundred Indians resident at the mission. These included Abenakis, Mohicans, Shawnees, Delawares, Miamis and Potawatomis. There were a number of French Canadian traders and trappers resident at the mission with their families. An irregular street of log cabins extended along the bluff, with the chapel situated at one end on the site of the present hotel Whitcomb, which is now in process of giving place to a fine new hotel for the city by the lake.

Meantime there was fierce warfare between the French protected Indians and the French hating Iroquois. With the aid of the trappers the mission Indians of Saint Joseph won a great battle with the Iroquois. A hundred prisoners were taken and brought to the mission. Here the allied Indians proceeded to take revenge for all the wrongs they had suffered at the hands of the Iroquois. Great fires were built and the prisoners killed and roasted to furnish material for the first banquet ever held at Saint Joseph. The horrified priests intervened in vain, although they did succeed in baptizing one Iroquois named Broken Hand. The feast lasted all night. There was puree of Iroquois, roast Tuscarora, fried and fricaseed Ottawa while the old hags were seen sucking marrow bones and the children regaling themselves on toasted fingers or toes. The priests were in danger because of their interference so they shut themselves into their chapel where they prayed all night. At midnight a bestial savage stalked into the chapel and handed them a roasted arm upon which to feast. They

recognized the arm of their convert and reverently buried it under the floor of the chapel. Thus occurred the first Christian burial in Saint Joseph.

The Iroquois took a horrible revenge later. In great force they descended on the mission and besieged it all day. At night the survivors took to their canoes and fled up river to what is now known as Indian Fields at Berrien Springs. Here they landed and slept in fancied security. The Iroquois discovered their flight and pursued along the river trail. Just as day was breaking they attacked the sleeping mission Indians and traders and massacred the lot.

Thus vanished the first settlement of Saint Joseph. Once more the bluff was deserted while only the howling wolf or the prowling bear roamed over the site of the first village, and again the wilderness was king.

The site at the mouth of the river was too favored to be long abandoned. In accordance of their policy to take and hold the interior for France, the French rebuilt the fort and garrisoned it. Another village sprang up around the fort. The fort was once raided by the Spanish after the French had lost their inland empire with the surrender of Quebec. The English garrisoned and held the fort until Pontiac hatched his conspiracy to destroy all settlements. Here at Fort Saint Joseph, built on the old site of LaSalle's fort, and not forty miles up river as some contend, occurred the massacre of Saint Joseph when the apparently peaceful Potawatomis entered the fort and slew the garrison without mercy. Thus the second attempt at settlement vanished in blood. Twenty years later came William Burnett and established his trading post about a mile up river close to where the Baptist Orphans' Home now stands. Here he built huge warehouses and here his followers built themselves log homes for their families. A flourishing village sprang up. The land was cleared and a large orchard set out. Burnett's books show such items as doctors' bills, tailors' bills, boards of lumber sold, and a regular trade in loaves of bread. There was evidently all the appurtenances of village life,—doctor, tailor, baker, saw mill,

grist mill, general store, church, school and residences, in fact a regular village. Burnett married an Indian girl, Wawkena, daughter and sister of chieftains. He extended his trade as far south as the Wabash, established branch trading stations at Bertrand at the mouth of the Cheecaugau river and had in his employ dozens of wandering traders. He owned two sailing vessels and kept up a regular schedule of runs to Detroit. Surely here seemed a permanent settlement at last. Burnett grew old, his half breed sons were worthless drunkards, his trade declined and the village grew feeble. Finally it too disappeared leaving behind only the sagging remains of moldering cabins to tell the tale. Another village had vanished and again the wilderness encroached upon the site of the city of Saint Joseph.

Before the last remains of Burnett's settlement had vanished there came down river a young teacher named Calvin Britain. Disgusted with affairs at the Cary mission he was on his way home to New York State. He landed near the mouth of the river and was so favorably impressed that he stayed right there. He sent east for his friends, they came in numbers and another village sprang up like magic. This was the village of Newburyport, the first county seat of Berrien County. It was built largely along the river and principally on the flats on the north side. Streets were laid out, stores and dwelling houses were built, the village was platted up river over a mile. Apparently here was a permanent settlement at last.

But fate was to play one more trick. The villagers brought disaster on their heads because of their own enterprise. A better harbor was needed. Lieutenant Berrien came and straightened the river by constructing a dam just at the curve of the bluff and cutting a ditch across the dunes. The river was made to wash out a new channel across the peninsula and piers were built to confine it within banks so a deep channel could be maintained. It was a wonderful improvement but it brought about unseen results. When the channel was cut across the peninsula dunes, a way was opened for the fierce west winds, while the sand was loosened from protecting grass

roots. The winds swept through the gap with irresistible force, drove the dunes inward where the houses of Newburyport obstructed their passage. Here the sands were deposited, and in time the village of Newburyport was buried under countless tons of sand and there it is to this day. Another village had vanished.

The villagers gave up the fight, and moved over the river, and up on the bluff. Thus was born the village of Saint Joseph, which in due time became the prosperous and beautiful city which you see today. Nearly four centuries have elapsed since first the missionary priests chose the site at the mouth of the river as the place for a settlement. Through nearly four hundred years of tragic, unremitting effort, men struggled to realize that ideal. It is realized at last, as a visit to the sister city will furnish proof; and do you wonder that we speak of it in loving cadence, as "Old Saint Joe."

## OLD TRAILS OF CENTRAL MICHIGAN

BY EDMUND A. CALKINS

MASON

THE Indian trails like the modern roads lead from somewhere to somewhere. They served the human needs of the Indian and were usually, we note, well located for movement from one important district of Indian geography to another. The Indian had neither the knowledge nor the means of his white successor to overcome physical obstacles, but his skill in woodcraft enabled him to select and utilize the most favorable routes available for directness and ease of foot travel.

Tribal geography as well as the early establishment of a white settlement at Detroit have, no doubt, to some extent determined the location and importance of the trails in this part of the Peninsula. La Salle, probably the first white man to penetrate this part of Michigan, stated in 1680 concerning it:<sup>1</sup>

"The Indians do not hunt in this region, which is debatable ground between five or six nations who are at war and, being afraid of each other, do not venture into these parts except to surprise each other, and always with the greatest precaution and all possible secrecy."

This was at a time when the aggressions of the Iroquois of the New York region were carrying terror to more distant tribes than those of this district and the condition La Salle mentions was, no doubt, due to their insolence and the fear it aroused. Shortly, thereafter, however, the French of Canada, to further their policy of amity and trade with the Indians found it necessary to humble the Iroquois, and thereby brought a degree of peace to the Lake tribes. In 1701 Detroit was founded by the French and we glean from their history that under their presence and apparently by their management<sup>2</sup> certain tribes took up and claimed as their hunting grounds the territories within easy reach of that post.

<sup>1</sup>Parkman, *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West*, 194.

<sup>2</sup>*Mich. Hist. Colls.*, VI, 459.

The Hurons, later known as the Wyandots, had been the special objects of French missionary and trading enterprise fifty years before at their old location around Georgian Bay<sup>3</sup> and had long found protection from the vengeance of the Iroquois in an alliance with the French. This tribe followed the French and fixed their tribal seat on the Detroit River about the mouth of the Huron to which they gave their name and over the drainage basin of which they extended their hunting grounds.

The Ottawas likewise had long enjoyed friendly relations with the French at their old location on the Ottawa River of Canada; had likewise suffered from Iroquois hostility in that district and had gradually drifted around the French Stations at Mackinaw and on Manitoulin Island. A southern branch finally located upon the Grand River and another followed the French to Detroit and fixed their tribal domain on the Detroit River and Lake St. Clair above that post and apparently extended their forest sovereignty over the Clinton River basin across the upper parts of the East Branch of the Huron River and the South Branch of the Shiawassee into the Grand River District and its tributaries where they were evidently supreme until the period of their great Chief Pontiac. Incident to the failure of Pontiac's plans for an Indian federation the Ottawas seem to have in part dispersed to the Illinois country.<sup>4</sup> Those remaining on the Grand River were no longer an unmixed tribe at the coming of white settlement.

The Pottawatamies also seem to have abandoned their old location on Green Bay, Wisconsin and came under the protection of the French at old Fort Miami or St. Joseph. They made the St. Joseph and Kalamazoo Valleys their principal tribal domain and there is reason to believe that the upper Grand River basin was somewhat under their rule also. They remained one of the strongest tribal units in the Peninsula at the time of general white settlement of that district.

The Chippewas were then located on the shores of Lake

<sup>3</sup>Parkman, *Jesuits in North America*.

<sup>4</sup>Volwiler, *Croghan and the Westward Movement*, 175, 183, 187, 189. See also *Mich. Hist. Colls.*, XXI, 637.

Superior and the northern part of the Lower Peninsula about Mackinac, having come under French influence somewhat later than the others.

Indian tradition and various shadowy early records also fix the tribal domain of two kindred or, at least allied, tribes in this Peninsula, namely, the Reynards or Foxes and the Sakis or Sacs on Saginaw Bay and its affluents. These tribes it appears were jealous of French influence and resented the establishment of Detroit which they attacked with the usual Indian cunning in 1712. French diplomacy enlisted the assistance of their faithful allies, the Pottawatamies, Ottawas and Wyandots and the aggressors were harshly dealt with.<sup>5</sup> It is possible that at about this time or as an incident of this aggression the war of extermination against the Sakis or Sacs, whereby they were crushed between an invasion of Chippewas and Ottawas from the north and the southern Ottawas from the south, as Indian tradition relates,<sup>6</sup> took place. After many years the old Sac domain was occupied by a Chippewa offshoot which has come down in history as the Saginaws or Saginaw Tribe.

Such seems to have been the tribal geography of that part of the Peninsula contiguous to Detroit after the founding of that place, although it must be noted that tribal sovereignty in any district was poorly delimited and subject to frequent and extensive changes. The influence of Detroit was apparently dominant from the beginning in determining this order of Indian sovereignty changing as it was and it is quite evident that the opportunities for barter of furs for a few indispensable implements of civilized production must have led to the development of well worn paths from the inland forest domains of these tribes to that center. Then as now many of the principal routes of communication lead to Detroit.

In discussing the Indian routes of travel it should be noted that the rivers, creeks and lakes were the principal routes of travel as well as important sources of subsistence. Hence, we

<sup>5</sup>*Ibid.*, 603. See also Catlin, *The Story of Detroit*, 12-17.

<sup>6</sup>*History of Shiawassee and Clinton Counties* (Ellis), 10; see also *History of Genesee County* (Ellis), 12-13.



View of Old Ford at the "Great Crossing" of the Shiawasse, from the right (easterly) bank. This was the site of the Old Indian Village, Keetchewanawaugenink and focal point of many trails

find the Indian's loose territorial sovereignty centered upon the important river systems. The most feasible routes of canoe carry between the rivers in the interior were known and utilized. In winter when the streams and lakes were frozen or in war when movements must be concealed, the overland trails were from necessity the chosen routes.

Upon the opening of the interior of Southern Michigan to white settlement, the old tribal centers had their principal trails radiating from Detroit. First we have the old trail to the Saginaw, located substantially upon the present route of trunk line highway U. S. 10. It was appropriately known in the early period as the Saginaw trail.<sup>7</sup> With this trail we are not immediately concerned.

Connecting with this trail in the central part of Oakland County was a main trail penetrating the old Ottawa hunting grounds on Grand River. This trail, upon the authority of Benjamin O. Williams, a former Indian trader and distinguished pioneer resident of Owosso, is stated to have been located as follows:

"The most important of these [trails] was the one known as the 'Grand River Trail,' which, leaving that river at the mouth of the Looking Glass, passed up the last-named stream on its northern side through Clinton County to what are now the Villages of Dewitt and Laingsburg, and thence through Shiawassee County south of the Village of Hartwellville to a point where an ancient Indian village was situated on the Looking Glass in the present township of Antrim. There it forked, and the more southerly branch (known as the Red Cedar Trail) passed south to the Cedar River in Livingston County, but the main Grand River trail continued eastward, crossed the Shiawassee River where the present hamlet of Burns stands, bore away southeast to Byron, and thence across the southwest corner of Genesee County and the northeast corner of Livingston into and through Oakland County to Pontiac and Detroit."<sup>8</sup> The hamlet Burns mentioned by Mr. Wil-

<sup>7</sup>This trail has been called the Neshingwac trail, evidently an Indian name. *Mich. Hist. Colls.*, XI, 265.

<sup>8</sup>*History of Shiawassee and Clinton Counties* (Ellis), 25.



View of westerly bank of the Shilawassee River at the "Great Crossing." The road up which the ox-teams of the early settlers tolled can be seen among the trees to the left of the ravine

liams was located on the site of the old Indian reservation known of record as Keetch-e-waun-daug-e-nink but which is mentioned by Mr. Williams as Kechewondaugoning. Our authority further states that it was a radial point of other important trails notably one to Saginaw. He calls the point the "great crossing" of the Shiawassee. It was in the Northwest corner of Burns Township and was the site of the early Indian trading posts of Henry Bolieu and Whitmore Knaggs; it was the principal seat of the Shiawassee bands of the Saginaws and is always mentioned as an important Indian village.

An examination of the route of this Grand River trail, as he names it, shows how well chosen it was in its physical aspects. The Looking Glass is a stream drawing nearly all of its affluents from difficult marsh country south of its main course, which connected with the Red Cedar marshes, while its northern bank is not far from the dry ridges separating its watershed from that of the Maple and along which the trail was located. Its entire route from the Grand to the Pontiac Lake region must have been an ideal forest path. The United States Deputy Surveyors have noted the location of this trail at nearly all points of their traverses and abundantly support the statement of Mr. Williams as to its location. This trail was later utilized in part as the route of the "Pontiac and Grand River Road" first located by B. O. Williams in 1833, and cut through by the Judge Dexter colonizing party at that time on their journey to their lands at Ionia.<sup>9</sup> By the Act of March 9th, 1844, it was legally established as a road and finally improved to a main line road. It had for many years been relegated to the place of a common country road and many of the hamlets formerly lively corners on its route, have all but disappeared. Recently the part from Dewitt to old Pittsburg has been made Trunk Line No. 78 and it is now improved over much of its route.

Mr. Williams seems to name this the "Grand River Trail." It is probable that at the height of Ottawa possession this was their principal overland route between their western and

---

<sup>9</sup>*Ibid.*



View of Grand River on Section 22, Rives, Jackson County, at the location of the Old Ford on the So-wau-que-sake or Thornapple Trail. Dredging operations have marred the original setting of this point

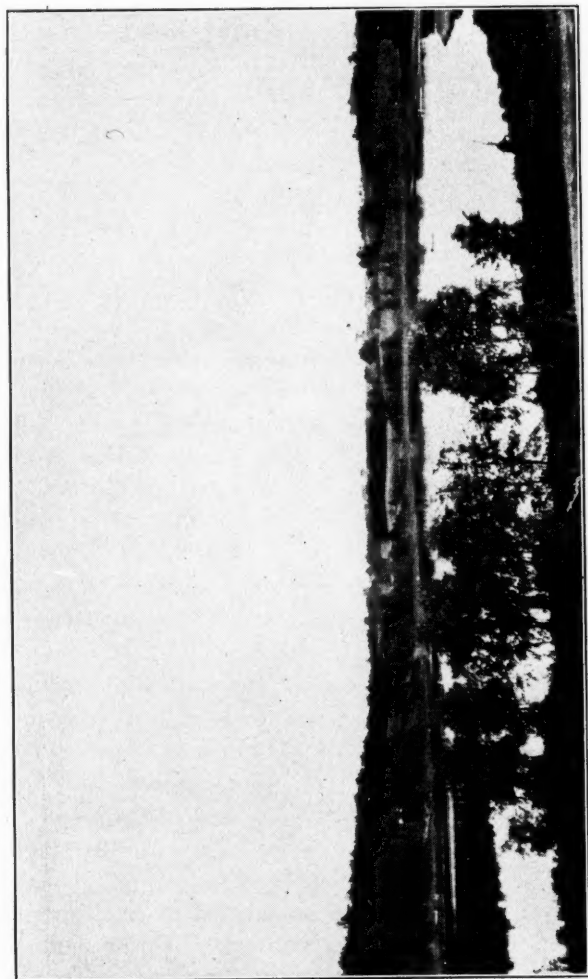
eastern seats of tribal power. It passed through the beautiful lake region in the western part of Oakland County said to have been the usual place of abode of the great chief, Pontiac, in his days of peace<sup>10</sup> and penetrated to the very heart of the Grand River basin at the mouth of the Looking Glass. It would seem that to preserve some of its meaning and importance in the Indian occupation of the district it might appropriately have been called the "Ottawa Trail."

There appears to have been another important trail connecting the Thornapple lake and river region with Detroit. Edward A. Foote, in a *Historical Sketch of Eaton County*.<sup>11</sup> mentions among others a trail from the west through Charlotte and Eaton Rapids toward Jackson, with one branch extending southwesterly from Charlotte to Bellevue through the basin of the Battle Creek. This westerly trail penetrated the basin of the Thornapple River presumably to the old Indian Village in Barry County, formerly an important branch of the Ottawas of the Grand River. An examination of the U. S. surveys, indicates, however, that while it was, no doubt, a direct route from the upper Grand in Jackson County to the Thornapple it was moreover one of the best marked trails of the state leading to the watershed of the Huron River and Detroit. This trail crossed the line between Eaton and Jackson Counties very near the present location of Trunk Line No. 50 and that road is now located on or near much of this trail as far as about a mile northwest of Tompkins Center, Jackson County. Thence the trail extended easterly across Rives Township passing over the site of the present village of Rives Junction and crossing the Grand River on Section 22, Rives, about on the line between the farms of J. Lake and E. W. Berry, thence trends easterly, passing over or near the site of the hamlet Henrietta, thence northeasterly along the east side of Battese<sup>12</sup> Lake to about the present location of the east and west

<sup>10</sup>*Mich. Hist. Colls.*, VII, 537-8.

<sup>11</sup>*Ibid.*, III, 380.

<sup>12</sup>This name is evidently a phonetic form of the French christian name Baptiste, being the name by which the early French trader on the shore of this lake was familiarly known. It was commonly written Battise by the early settlers.



View of Island Lake, Lyndon, Washtenaw County, a spot of beauty on the Old  
Thornapple or So-wau-que-sake Trail

highway passing by Batteese Lake and first to the north. From that point this east and west highway practically marks the trace of the old trail running easterly through the old corners long known as "Gasburg" crossing Cahoogan and Orchard Creek through Pixleys corners in Waterloo and continuing on the present route of this main road to the east and over the part now established as Trunk Line No. 92 through Lyndon Township, Washtenaw County, to an intersection with the main portage path leading from South Lake to the waters of the Portage River in Jackson County to the west, this intersection being on the north side of Section 21, Lyndon, evidently very near the present location of the Lyndon Town Hall. From this point the trail lead by the north side of Island Lake on Section 23, Lyndon, and practically on what is now the location of the highway extending directly around the north shore of Island Lake to the Village of Dexter and forming a junction with a southwesterly trail, presumably the main Pottawattamie trail, on Section 28, Dexter. About 25 miles of this trace lying east of Grand River has been superseded by a highway in the early establishment of roads and now about five or six miles of this road is a trunk line.

On this trail, Jean Baptiste Berard, or Boreaux, as his descendants have it, established his trading post on the east side of Batteese Lake at the point of its crossing a north and south trail yet to be described. Such scanty facts as we can gather concerning it indicate that it was an important line of forest travel from the west toward Detroit. William W. Heald, of Williamston, has mentioned incidents of the Indian use of this trail while he was a small boy living at Pixley's Corners in Waterloo. It evidently was the main route of the Indians of the Thornapple basin to the Huron and Detroit and may with propriety be designated the So-wau-que-sake, or Thornapple, Trail.<sup>13</sup>

Farther to the south was the east and west trail passing over the site of the City of Jackson and from which its Trail

<sup>13</sup>So-wau-que-sake, the Indian name of the Thornapple River. *Mich. Hist. Colls.*, XI, 193.



Boulder marking site of Old Berard Trading Post on shore of Batteese Lake,  
Henrietta, Jackson County

Street gets its name. In some places this latter trail appears as three distinct parallel traces and is designated and marked "Indian Trail" on the original plat of the north part of Leoni Township, surveyed by Harvey Parke, in March, 1825. This was the main trail from the Kalamazoo to the Huron River District across the upper basin of the Grand River and the principal route traveled by the Pottawatamies between their western camping grounds and Detroit. L. A. Norris, an early resident of Washtenaw County has stated concerning Indian Trails in that county:<sup>14</sup>

"Another road lead northwesterly from Detroit to Pontiac and the Saginaws, while the Pottawattamie trail up and down the Huron used by the Indians on their way from the far west to their payments at Malden, was a well recognized means of entrance and exit."

If we may judge from the many trails recorded in and about the district between the Portage river of the Grand River system and the most westerly branch of the Huron, this must have been a district much visited by the Indians and the usual hunting ground of populous bands. Connecting, as it does, a direct canoe route from the mouth of the Grand on Lake Michigan to the mouth of the Huron on Lake Erie and being moreover the key of entry into Detroit of all the district west of the Huron basin, it is not strange that this should be a favored locality. The upper Portage River of the Grand, in its original condition, was a sluggish stream extending out over its basin of extensive marshes and many lakes through several affluents, having many stretches of wide channel of quiet water the ideal course for canoe navigation. Interspersed through these are the many areas of what were originally open ridges of oak and other hardwoods extending to the tributaries of the Huron. These ridges were well suited to the subsistence of an Indian population; attractive to them as a usual place of abode, and admitting ready egress in the open season to the waters of Lake Michigan or those of Lake Erie.

<sup>14</sup>*History of Washtenaw County* (Chapman), 528; see also *Mich. Hist. Colls.*, I, 328.

We note that a well marked trail running up from the portage marshes to the south crossed the Thornapple trail on the southeast quarter of Section 1, in Waterloo, Jackson County, and ran northeasterly across the corner of Washtenaw County, northerly and northwesterly across the corner of Livingston County, crossing the old portage creek of the Huron, and passing into Stockbridge, Ingham County, ran along the ridges east of that stream northerly to Lowe Lake, which seems to have been the location of a much frequented Indian village in the period of Indian occupation. Joseph Wampler, the Deputy Surveyor, who surveyed and mapped this town, notes in his return that on November 15, 1825, several Indian wigwams were set up on the east side of this lake, which he names Portage Lake, on the farm on Section 11, now owned by Clifford J. Lantis. He further notes that trails from the northeast and west also met at this lake while another trail connecting with the Thornapple Trail came up from the southwest on the ridges bordering the easterly side of the Orchard Creek and its marshes.

This latter trail with its connections made a continuous and direct trail from Lowe Lake to the site of the city of Jackson. That it was a well known trail to the early settlers is indicated by Act No. 79 of 1839, wherein a state road was authorized as follows:

"Commencing at the Village of Pontiac in the County of Oakland, thence on the most direct and eligible route through the County of Livingston by way of Meadville to what is called the Battise Trail in the Township of Stockbridge, Ingham County, thence on the most direct and eligible route to the Village of Jackson, in the County of Jackson."

The most direct and eligible route to Jackson was the trails mentioned. It does not appear that the commissioners named ever laid out this road but highways now mark the most of this trail from Lowe Lake to Jackson.

Evidently there was more than one portage path or canoe carrying place connecting the waters of the Grand River with that of the Huron. We find that upon the notes and map

returned by Joseph Wampler, deputy surveyor, who surveyed originally what is now the Township of Stockbridge, Ingham County, he has given the name "Portage" to the lake now known as Lowe Lake as well as to the creek, the most westerly branch of the Huron River, which takes its rise from this lake. His use of this name for this stream implies its connection with a portage path and the topography of its upper course suggests the likely use of the low ridges extending from this creek on the site of the village of Stockbridge, northwesterly and westerly across Section 26, 27, 28 and 21 to a connection with Orchard Creek, a tributary of the Grand River, near its issue from Jacobs Lake on Section 21. It would make a carry of a little more than two miles. Again, the designation of the lake above as Portage Lake seems to imply the occasional use of a path noted running westerly from the head of the Lake across Sections 2 and 3 to the basin of Doan Creek as a carrying place to the canoe navigation on that stream, a portage which in the natural condition of that stream would require an even shorter carry than the one mentioned above. This would have been an especially desirable route in times of danger on the Upper Grand River as that river would then be entered by the mouth of the Red Cedar River. While he noted the path running westerly from the head of the Lake he does not positively state it to be a portage path. It is believed, however, that the principal portage was from some point on the southerly inlet of South Lake on Section 15, Lyndon, southward and westward across Sections 15, 22, 21, 20, 17 and 18 in Lyndon, Washtenaw County, to that head spring of the Portage River of the Grand River System on Section 13 in Waterloo, Jackson County, designated Leeke Lake on the U. S. Topographic Map of the Stockbridge Quadrangle, on the path noted in the original surveys of these towns and as shown on the original maps of the same. Here again the Deputy Surveyors do not designate this as a portage path, no doubt, because they did not trace its line, merely making a safe record of it as "a path" or an "Indian Trail," wherever their lines intersected it. This connecting path further intersects on the

west the Portage Creek flowing to Little Portage Lake of the Grand as well as Lecke Lake and on the east terminated at the southerly inlet of South Lake, tributary to the Huron. This path is noted also in Jackson County as extending from the Portage Creek crossing on Section 14 southwestward across Sections 15, 22 and 21, into the extensive marsh area about the Big and Little Portage Lakes, evidently to a point of canoe embarkation on this latter stream nearer the Little Portage. Presumably this extension was of use at times when low water did not permit canoe passage to the upper crossings. There was also a connecting trail running off from this trail on Section 15, Waterloo, trending northwesterly to a junction with the Thornapple trail about one and one-half miles east of Orchard Creek. The early local writers have made no certain mention of the Huron-Grand Portage, at least as far as the writer can find. Such evidence as we may now gather, suggests that this must have been the principal carrying place between the two rivers. It was never a carrying place of great importance historically or commercially from the point of view of the white man's interest. No map of the district mentions it until 1821<sup>15</sup> which was about the date of entry to the district of the traders and government surveyors. To the Indian, however, this portage was a route of great importance and we may fairly assume has borne the pageantry of many Indian passages both peaceful and martial.

Ingham County did not offer a topograph suited to a main east and west trail. The Grand River and the Sycamore and Red Cedar, joining it in Lansing, especially the latter two, were streams having their rise in extensive areas of marsh and wet woods. The courses of the Sycamore and the tributaries of the Red Cedar were on north and south lines and made their basins inconvenient as routes for extended east and west trails. Over one line for north and south movement, however, we find a favorable route and on this was traced the most important trail of the county, the main street of our savage predecessors.

<sup>15</sup>*Geographical, Statistical and Historical Map of Michigan Territory*—No. 36

This trail may be traced from the crossing of the Pottawatamie trail on the site of the present City of Jackson, north and northeasterly, roughly on the line of the Cooper Street and Henrietta Road to a junction with the Thornapple trail near the northeast shore of Batteese Lake at the location of Berard's trading post. From this junction it trended northwesterly across Batteese Creek into Bunker Hill, Ingham County, running roughly along the north and south road past the Laberteaux school house and Styles farm and on along the Felt Plains road bearing westerly into Leslie Township across Sections 12, 1 and 2 entering Section 35, Vevay, about eighty rods west of the Hawley road thence northerly and northeasterly crossing Mud Creek upon or near the game farm. Thence northeasterly to the line between the old Bush and Brown farms on the easterly margin of a little swale crossed by that line, thence northerly crossing trunk line No. 49 a little east of old Parker's Corners, so-called, continuing northerly across the site of the buildings on the Deo farm, formerly Elijah Brooks farm, on Section 1, Vevay, into and along the east side of the great marsh in Alaiedon to the ridges about Dobie's (formerly Leeks) Lake. From this point this trail ran northerly and northeasterly across Red Cedar River crossing Trunk Line No. 16 between Sylvandale Inn and the Cedar Bridge and crossing the Meridian Line road about one-half mile north of the old chapel on the Forester, now Call, farm thence on northeasterly into Williamston and into the high hills in the northern part of that town and the district about Owen's Lake on Section 1. In this town there were many trails crisscrossing about indicating a favorite district of the Indians for camps or hunting grounds.

From Owen's Lake this trail trended northeasterly approximately along the course of the old Spaulding Road across the southeast corner of Woodhull, into Perry, Shiawassee County to near the location of old Perry, thence easterly into Antrim presumably to the Indian Village mentioned by Mr. Williams and from thence to the "great crossing" of trails and river mentioned by Mr. Williams at Ketchewandagoning, or Knaggs

station, where it crossed the Ottawa or Grand River trail and connected with the Saginaw trail down the Shiawassee.<sup>16</sup>

Tracing this old trail now we are impressed with the importance it must have had in the savage economy of the wilderness, connecting as it does the various trails described radiating from Detroit. It seems no indulgence of imagination to assert its importance for we find Whitmore Knaggs choosing the "great crossing" on the Shiawassee as his site for a trading post in 1820 and Jean Baptiste Berard choosing the junction at Batteese Lake, Jackson County, as a desirable trading location at about the same time. That Berard chose his location with good judgment is affirmed by a further statement of B. O. Williams, who states:<sup>17</sup>

"Not long after the time mentioned (1820) a Frenchman named Battise (correctly Baptiste) opened a post on the upper waters of the Grand River, in the present County of Jackson, and this became a somewhat popular trading place, even for some of the Indians living as far north as the territory of Clinton and Shiawassee Counties."

We are further impressed with the readiness with which the early white settlers fixed upon this same general route as a suitable location for a road. In 1840 the State Legislature authorized the establishment of what was named the Shiawassee road extending from Mason through Okemos, past Pine Lake and through Shiawassee County to Owosso, which was established and paralleled this old Indian trail at a distance of three or four miles well to the end of its route. Viewing this trail from this part of its course and having in mind the

<sup>16</sup>In describing the trails in this article the field notes and maps of the original United States surveys are the chief reliance. The instructions of the Surveyor General required deputies to note all roads and trails found, with their direction. Surveys in this district were made from 1822 to 1826, and do not exhibit uniform results in observing and recording these features. Consequently omissions are found evidently partly due to the care of the deputy but largely to controlling causes, such as deep snows obliterating the traces for a time, open woods diffusing the trails so that well marked traces were not to be found and the well known practice of the Indian concealing his trails at points likely to be visited by enemies such as at or in the vicinity of the crossing of a stream commonly used for canoe travel, etc. But, even where omissions appear, we may be certain the intersections recorded are positive and we may by the successive locations and direction trends noted taken in connection with the intervening topography, whether favorable or unfavorable as a trail route, reasonably outline the location of these old trails.

<sup>17</sup>*History of Shiawassee and Clinton Counties* (Ellis), 12.

local band of Indians with which it gave communication on the north it may also, not without appropriateness, be called the Shiawassee trail.

The southern parts of Clinton and Shiawassee Counties from Bath to the Shiawassee River as well as about Pine Lake, Leek's Lake above mentioned, and the ridges about Okemos were intersected with minor trails indicating the active occupancy made of these localities by the Indian when white men first came among them. It is noted also that many of these minor trails served as further connection between the Shiawassee trail and the main Ottawa trail along the Looking Glass.

A further connecting trail left the main north and south trail above described on the Bush Farm on Section 24, Vevay, and ran southeasterly practically upon what was later the location of the old Mason and Dexter Road, or Etchell's Road, through Ingham as far as the old Jacob Dakin farm. From that point the trail trended southeasterly along the ridges over which ran the highway past the old Countryman farm of early times, to the approximate route of the road through the William Howlett farm in Bunker Hill, and about along that road southeasterly to the southern end of Lowe Lake in Stockbridge and the other trails converging there. This fact, in part drawn from tradition, is so consistent with the usual skill of the aborigine in selecting his trail that it cannot be doubted. Then again the eastern part of the route is noted on the original survey records. For its entire distance it traverses the ridges separating the watershed of the Red Cedar from that of the Portage and was a direct route from the north to the Huron hunting grounds to the southeast. Other minor trails scattered through Ingham County can be traced wholly or in part. The important ones are these here described or mentioned.

We fain would connect something of historical interest with these old trails if we could but they served the unlettered Indian, and as trails practically passed with him. The first settlers used them here and there as the route of entry to their pioneer locations and they frequently located their first

highways along their traces, principally because no better routes for highways could be found. It is evident that the route traversed by Henry Hawley, which he calls the Okemos and Battise trail, as related in his pioneer sketch of the family's early experiences in Vevay<sup>18</sup> was principally over the old trail from Jackson by way of Berard's old trading point, and just as likely this was the woods trail he travelled to Jackson and return in a single night to replace the saw in his mill<sup>19</sup> on what is now the game farm.

We can be fairly certain that it was on the Pottawatomie trail in Jackson County, at least over parts of it, that La Salle pursued his perilous journey in the first days of April, 1680, guided by his faithful Mohegan and pursued by a band of Mascontin Indians whom he succeeded in turning from their murderous designs upon his party. His description of this journey makes it reasonably certain that across Jackson County was where he encountered the marshes mentioned by him and through which he struggled for three days from March 30th to April 1st of that year.<sup>20</sup>

While certain incidents may not be found, we may be fairly certain that over these trails passed hostile war bands during the Revolution directed against the Ohio River frontier by the British and that many a hapless captive was led to the torture or to adoption at their inland villages upon their return from the war path. Near the close of that struggle when the British power was much weakened in these parts and they must act on the defensive we find them seeking to restrain the Indian incursions to the Ohio because of the retaliation it drew upon them from the Kentucky frontier. On January 7th, 1783, Arent S. De Peyster, Major, commanding at Detroit, wrote General Haldimand;<sup>21</sup>

"Lieut. Du Quindre is gone off to stop the Ottawas of Michilimackinac, who winter at the Grand River and are intent upon revenging the death of their young warriors."

<sup>18</sup>*History of Ingham and Eaton Counties* (Ellis), 310.

<sup>19</sup>*Ibid.* 312. Also *Ingham County Pioneer and Historical Society Manuscript—Reminiscences of a Pioneer—Baldwin Sitts.*

<sup>20</sup>Quoted in Parkman, *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West*, 195.

<sup>21</sup>*Mich. Hist. Colls.*, XI, 336.

In a letter written June 5th, 1783, De Peyster states that four hundred ninety-two prisoners had been brought in to Detroit,<sup>22</sup> which is some indication of the results of the border raids of the Indians in that war among whom those of this district were active warriors.

Again we have an account of an enforced visit to Central Michigan of William Atherton, a Kentucky youth who served in the North Western army during the war of 1812. He became a minister in the Methodist Episcopal church and in later life wrote a narrative of his experiences in that war.

Atherton served under Captain John Simpson in Colonel Allen's command at the battle of Frenchtown or River Raisin; was wounded and when the Indian allies of the British attacked the wounded quartered on the scene of action on the morning of January 22nd, 1813, was claimed by an Indian Chief as his prisoner and through his protector escaped the massacre that befell so many of the wounded on that day. His captor conducted him to Malden thence to his encampment on the River Rouge west of Detroit, where during a celebration of the victory the squaws concealed the prisoner in the woods that he might not be a victim of some drunken savage.

A few days thereafter the band among which he was held a prisoner dispersed to their winter hunting grounds. Atherton states: "as well as I am able to judge, we travelled a west course. We were upon the road about two weeks; \* \* \* I suppose we travelled one hundred and fifty miles before we reached our destination."

Apparently he spent the late winter upon the Grand River system not far from our own district and in the neighborhood of some important Indian Village which he mentions but to which, to his good fortune, his Indian family did not take him. It is practically certain that Atherton passed over some of these trails. He relates that he was adopted into the family of his captor; fitted out with Indian costume and bow and arrows; was required to accompany them on their hunting trips and in the spring assisted at their maple sugar making.

<sup>22</sup>*Ibid.*, 367.

Finally the band returned to Detroit to join the British in the 1813 campaign. We will let Atherton tell the story.

"The Indians now began to prepare to return to Detroit. This was very encouraging to me, for I now began again to indulge a hope that one day I should yet be free, and reach my friends at home. All hands turned out to making bark canoes. We made two for each large family. In these canoes we ascended the river upon which we had for some time been encamped, until we came to the very head spring—I had no means of ascertaining the name of this river—we then took up our canoes, and carried them three or four miles, to the head waters of a river that empties into Lake Erie between the rivers Raisin and Detroit. The ridge over which we carried our canoes divides the waters of Lake Michigan and Lake Erie. After entering this stream we advanced finely, finding fish in great abundance. I now began to feel quite cheerful, and things put on a different aspect. This was one of the most beautiful little rivers I ever beheld—I could see the fish at the bottom where the water was ten feet in depth—its beauty was much heightened by passing through several small lakes, the waters of which always enlarged—perhaps increased its waters one-half. These lakes were bordered round by various kinds of shrubbery bending over the water. It was now, as near as I could guess, about the first of May, and the scenes were indeed beautiful to one who had been freezing and starving in a northern winter, almost naked—and now turning, as he fondly hoped, his face homeward. \* \* \*<sup>23</sup>

From what he writes we may conjecture that the band made their portage by way of Leeke Lake and South Lake. His description and the distance he estimates fairly describes the conditions on that route.

These old trails are now forgotten paths largely because no historic events have been connected with them. The geography of this peninsula was not such as to force exploration or the establishment of routes of commerce into the interior. The surrounding lakes permitted the white man to reach every

<sup>23</sup>Atherton, *Scenes of the Lake War*, 92.

point of the shores of the Peninsula without difficult interior travel. He naturally preferred to let the Indian come to him on the coast rather than penetrate their dangerous forest domains. Although these trails were no more than the routes of the occasional trader or the trapper who chose the Indian manner of life they have a place in the history of Central Michigan.

## THE ARCHAEOLOGICAL COLLECTION IN THE MICHIGAN PIONEER MUSEUM

BY E. F. GREENMAN

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE Michigan Pioneer Museum at Lansing houses a very interesting and valuable collection of Indian relics, consisting for the most part of implements and ornaments of stone, copper and clay. While this collection is representative of Michigan archaeology, most of the pieces being found within the boundaries of the State, there are a number from the neighboring states of Ohio and Wisconsin. In addition there are a few specimens of pottery from Florida and Alabama. The fact that the localities in which most of the Michigan specimens were found are recorded in detail adds greatly to the interest and scientific value of the collection.

As a whole, the collection is made up of a number of smaller ones, presented at various times to the Museum by people whose interest in the subject has led them to insure the preservation of their relics in this manner. The two largest collections in the Museum were given by Mr. J. H. Edinger, of Hillsdale, and Colonel L. H. Ives, of Mason, and a number of other people have contributed valuable single specimens.

The aboriginal occupants of the United States made their arrow and spear points in an almost infinite variety of form, and the region of the Great Lakes offers no exception to this statement. In Plate I are shown a few implements of this type, arranged in series according to size, the smallest measuring less than an inch, and the largest about 7 inches, in length. Most of the specimens here shown are from Michigan, and each one is duplicated by from one to fifteen or twenty times throughout the entire collection. Just what is the meaning of this great variety of form and size of arrowpoints has never yet been satisfactorily worked out. Many people think that different kinds of points were used for different purposes, and

that this is true within certain limits is fairly certain. For example, the little triangular piece next to the last one on the top row at the right is found in great numbers in the state of New York, and it is a matter of historical record that the Iroquois Indians of that state used them almost exclusively in war, whereby this type of point has acquired the name "Iroquois war-point." In fact the warlike Iroquois rarely made any other type of arrowhead. This form, being small, and unnotched, would possess certain advantages over others in being quickly made and easy to haft. While arrowheads of this shape are fairly common in Michigan we are not justified in attributing them exclusively to Iroquois manufacture, for the Indians of Michigan also made them to some extent. They preferred the notch form however, and these far outnumber the "Iroquois war-points," so common in New York. In early times the Iroquois were occasional visitors to the Michigan peninsulas, and without doubt scattered a few of their arrowheads about, and in Wexford County, near Cadillac, more than a hundred of these small, triangular points were found a few years ago in a "cache," or hiding place in the ground, very likely placed there by an Iroquois raiding party. Another one of these points, about an inch long and made of pure black flint, was found in one of the gateways of an earthwork inclosure, a wall of earth with an outer ditch about 320 feet in diameter, in Alcona County a short time ago. Whether it was an Iroquois Indian who dropped it, or a Michigan Algonquian who carried it there unwillingly, having acquired it in a passage-at-arms with Iroquois enemies, cannot be said.

An examination of the forms shown in Plate I reveals a number of different classes of arrow points based upon the character of the notch alone. To begin with, there are the unnotched forms which we have just discussed; then there are notches that extend to the base of the arrowhead, as in the third one from the right end of the top row; again, there are notches at right angles to the length of the point, and those at an oblique angle; there is the deep notch only in the base of the point, as in the one at the left end of the top row, and

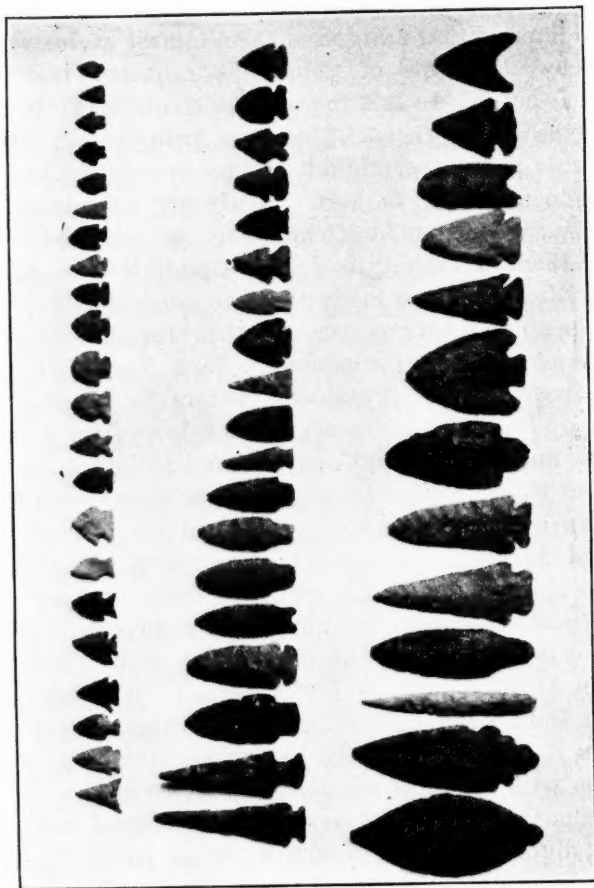


Plate 1.—A few arrowheads and spearheads representative of the collection in the Michigan Pioneer Museum

more pronounced, the larger one at the right end of the bottom row; some of the points have three notches, two at the side and one at the base, and finally, all these various types of notches occur on arrowheads of widely differing shapes, sizes, and techniques of manufacture. In fact in any one collection it would be very difficult to find two arrowheads which are exactly alike, and we may safely conclude that the forms which differ mostly from one another were so made in obedience to different utilitarian factors which played a part in their manufacture. For example, it is obvious that the "Iroquois war-point" was hafted in a different manner than those arrowheads having three notches, and the process of hafting depends upon the materials used for the purpose, whether strings of vegetable fibre, or thongs of leather. It is apparent furthermore that some of the points in the illustration were so notched as to leave barbs projecting from the sides to hinder their withdrawal. The point at the right end of the bottom row seems to have been made with this purpose in view. A number of other considerations undoubtedly play a large part in producing a great variety of shapes, such as skill, grade of flint, amount of time at the disposal of the maker and even preference for a certain shape for purely aesthetic reasons. It is not at all improbable that even superstition, or the feeling that a certain shape was "lucky," explain in some measure the variety of types shown in this illustration.

With regard to differences of technique however, we are confronted with what we might call the "evolutionary" element. The American Indian has been in the New World many thousands of years and there can be small doubt but that the arrowheads which they made when they first arrived here were very different from those made within the last five or six hundred years. Even a mere thousand years would develop a marked change in the form and function of these implements. To refer to Plate 1 again, at least three different techniques are here shown. In the first, the most common type, the arrowhead is roughly chipped down to the desired general shape, and then the notches, and the edge, are put on by more delicate

strokes called "secondary chipping." But the important thing is that the point is chipped on both sides. In contrast to this is the seventh arrowhead from the left end of the top row. The flat piece from which this one was made was knocked off from the original lump of flint by one blow, resulting in the smooth surface shown in the picture. This is known as the "flake" technique. The fourth arrowpoint from the right end of the bottom row is an example of the third technique. This is often called the "rotary" type. It will be noticed that there is a narrow bevel on the left side of this point extending from the tip to the notch, showing up in the illustration as a shadow. On the reverse and opposite side of this arrowhead is a similar bevel, in the *opposite* direction, so that if this arrowhead were not so heavy in proportion to its size it would revolve rapidly in flight. The explanation of these two bevels however, is probably to be found in the fact that in making the piece it was held in a certain way, in the hand or against a large stone, the edge chipped off, then turned over, the edge bevelled off on the opposite side, with the resulting positions of the two bevelled surfaces. The thing which we are most concerned with here however, is that these three techniques are not equally perfect from the point of view of ease and speed of execution, and it is reasonable to suppose that one may be an early, or primitive, form, one intermediate and the third more recent and therefore a better implement if we follow our own rule that practice makes perfect. However this may be, it has not yet been definitely established, and for all we know now each different form of arrow and spearhead may indicate no more than an individual or tribal preference based upon long usage.

The larger pieces in the illustration are commonly called "spearheads," and some of the aboriginal tribes did use the spear, but many of these forms were probably hafted on short handles for use as knives. The second one from the left end of the bottom row, which was found in Ohio, appears to have been so used, since it has two notches on one side and three on the other, no doubt to strengthen the piece on its handle to resist



Plate 2.—Some unusually fine and rare Indian relics from Michigan

a lateral pressure incident to cutting. The two serrated points, fifth and sixth from the left end of the middle row also have been knives, or "saws."

In Plate 2 are a few interesting Michigan specimens. The piece on the left at the top of the picture is a very fine tool of banded slate from Alcona County, Mikado Township, found and deposited in the Museum by Mr. S. P. Hertzler of Glennie. It is a double-edged tool, consisting of a gouge on one end and a chisel on the other. Its size is indicated by the 15-inch ruler at the bottom of the illustration. This implement was found within a mile of the earthwork inclosure already mentioned. It exhibits very fine workmanship and it must have been a great disappointment, as well as a great inconvenience to the aboriginal owner when he lost it. Such pieces as this are extremely rare, and the Indian who conceived and made it may well have been regarded as a genius by his fellow tribesmen, for he not only combined two tools in one piece, but the shape of the groove itself towards the back is a device which is strictly in accord with its function. In most gouges the groove is of the same width from one end to the other, a needless expenditure of time and energy in the making. The narrowing of the groove in this piece also contributes materially to the strength of the instrument. As to the purpose for which it was used, the first one that comes to mind is that of hollowing out a log in making a dug-out canoe. This was accomplished in many tribes by laying hot coals on the top of the log, and then scraping away the burnt fibres of the wood, alternately repeating the two processes until the desired depth and shape were obtained. This tool was no doubt used for a number of purposes however.

At the right of this gouge is another one, a fairly familiar form to collectors. This is made of a coarse-grained stone, and the left end has been somewhat chipped and battered, probably by another stone, or heavy stick of wood. There is some basis for the opinion that this type of "gouge" was used by the Indians in tapping maple trees for the sap, in the same manner as it is done today, with iron gouges. In fact, since the white



Plate 3.—Three types of Stone Axe. Ohio and Michigan

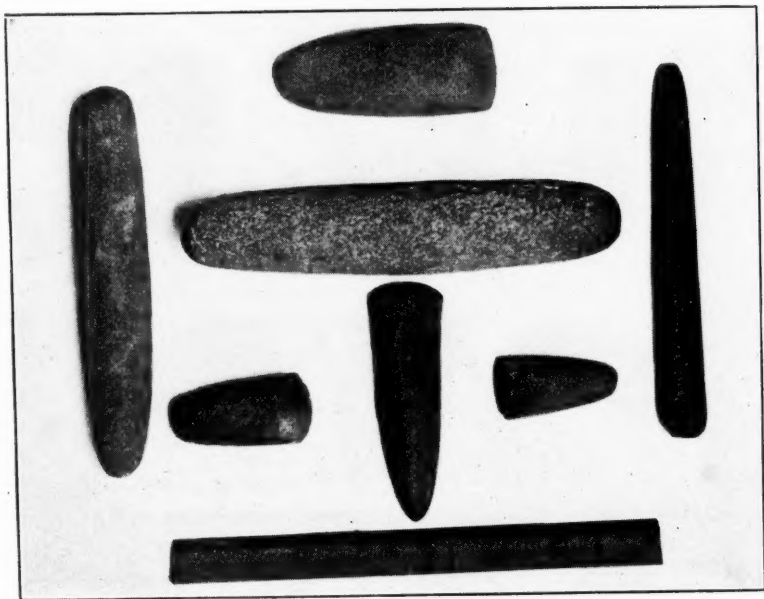


Plate 4.—Skinning Stones and Pestles. Michigan

man learned how to make maple sugar from the Indian, he probably copied the Indian's tools at the same time. The axe in the lower right hand corner of the illustration is of the type which has come to be known in archaeological literature as the "Michigan axe," the distinguishing feature being the projection of the ridges on each side of the groove out beyond the body of the axe. This type of axe is found almost exclusively in the lower peninsula of Michigan. The pitted stone in the center of the picture is another familiar feature of Great Lakes archaeology. A number of theories have been advanced to explain the purpose of such a stone. Some believe that it was a primitive paint-box, and that each of the little holes, or depressions, contained a different colored pigment. Another theory is that the holes were used to hold nuts while cracking them, and this theory is very attractive when we consider the lack of adaptation to that purpose of most aboriginal hammers and axes. The frequency with which these pitted stones are found with burials however gives some support to the supposition that they had a magical or ceremonial significance of some kind, and it is a remarkable fact that exactly this same type of stone has been found in France with burials which have been shown to be from ten to fifteen thousand years old.

In Plate 3 are six grooved axes, all from Michigan with the exception of the large one in the center of the top row, which was found in Ohio. This axe weighs eight pounds and is much larger than most grooved axes. It must have been a very effective tool for the heavier kind of work such as chopping down trees, although in such work its labor was probably softened by the use of fire. The remaining axes in this illustration are of two types. One type, represented by the axe at the left end of the upper row, was hafted upon a handle extending in the same direction as the cutting edge, the hafting end of the handle being tied securely against the flat surface by passing the thongs around the groove, and no doubt this end of the handle had a short projection at right angles to its length, which lay against the flat side of the axe, the thongs being tied around the notches thus provided. In the

axe at the left end of the lower row the handle extended apparently at right angles to the cutting edge, as it would be a difficult matter to fasten the handle to this piece in the other manner. Thus hafted this tool was probably used as an adze, or possibly as a hoe in breaking up the soil for the cultivation of maize.

In Plate 4 is a group of pestles and celts, or "skinning stones," all found in Michigan. These forms are very common throughout northeastern United States.

To return to Plate 2, three of the four pipes shown in this illustration will be recognized as familiar forms for the state of Michigan. The human head, carved out of sandstone however, is very unusual. It was found in Ingham County near Williamston, and resembles pipes which are occasionally found in the state of New York. On the top of the head can be seen an attempt to show the strands of the hair. The diameter of the hole in the top of the head for the tobacco is the length of the broken line. It tapers gradually toward the bottom, which is about at the level of the mouth. The hole for the insertion of the stem of the pipe, situated in the back, is conical in shape, and about three-quarters of an inch in diameter at the larger end.

In Plate 5 are a number of other pipes in the Museum collection. The two straight-stemmed pipes in the center are made of clay and are typical Michigan Algonquian pipes. Second from the right in the top row is shown a very shapely little slate pipe which was found in Branch County, Michigan. To the right of this one is a "Micmac" pipe, so-called because the shape is characteristic of stone pipes made by the Micmac Indians of Nova Scotia and Labrador. This type of pipe is occasionally found in Michigan, whether having been brought here by trade or travel, or made by Indians native to this region, it cannot be said. The third pipe from the right end of the top row is a very interesting one. Just above the hole for insertion of the stem is a figure of some kind of an animal, probably a deer or an elk, carved, or scratched into the surface. In execution this figure is very similar to some of the rock



Plate 5.—Stone and Clay Pipes from Michigan, Ohio and British Columbia

carvings which are to be seen along the Cass River, in Sanilac County, Michigan. To the left of this pipe is one of the so-called "tubular pipes," of frequent occurrence in Michigan, Ohio and lower Canada. The specimen here shown is from Hillsdale County, Michigan. Tubular pipes are usually, if not always, made of banded slate, and for this reason we cannot be entirely certain that they were made for the purpose of smoking tobacco. They may be just another one of the slate problematical forms which still remain, and probably always will remain, one of the mysteries of American archaeology. The two pipes at the left end of this row are "platform" pipes, from Ohio. They belong to the Hopewell culture of that state, which is a name given to a group of archaeological objects found in burial mounds in southern Ohio, with an antiquity of some 1500 years. This culture was characterized by the use of copper implements and ornaments, both cremation and inhumation, burial of the dead in large mounds sometimes thirty or forty feet in height, the ornamental use of fresh-water pearls and mica, and very skillful carving of stone. In the Museum of the Ohio Archaeological and Historical Society at Columbus, Ohio, are a large number of these "Platform" pipes, many of them with the bowls carved in the shape of birds, animals and human heads, beautifully executed and cleverly conventionalized. This collection of pipes, together with about a hundred others which are now in the Blackmore Museum, Salisbury, England, contains some of the finest examples of stone carving by primitive man in existence. In the two pipes in the illustration a fine hole runs the entire length of the stem.

The pipe representing a seated figure, at the right of the plate on the bottom row, is a very remarkable piece. The material of which it is made appears to be steatite, or "soapstone," a rather soft material which the Algonquian Indians used frequently in the making of ornaments. This pipe has two holes for tobacco, but unlike most pipes of this nature, only one of them may be used at once, for the holes are at each end of the vertical part. The hole for the insertion of the stem into the

bowl in the head of the figure is at the back, about at the neck. The hole for the other bowl comes out in the chest of the figure, so that when being smoked the face of the figure, upside down, is turned towards the smoker. Around the outside of the bowl in the head will be noticed a few projections representing feathers in the head of the figure. A more realistic representation of feathers is around the outside of the bowl at the other end. The most remarkable thing about this pipe however are the inscriptions on it, apparently scratched in with a sharp-pointed instrument, and rather crudely executed. The inscriptions read: "To Pontiac, 1762. Wm. Tucker, Captive." On the back of the figure is a picture of an Indian paddling a canoe. The pipe was found near Sandusky, Ohio. The inscriptions, as well as certain details of the carving, raise the question of the genuineness of the piece, but if it is of spurious origin there is probably no way of proving it satisfactorily. At any rate the one who made the inscriptions knew something of Indian history, for the date is correct. Pontiac, the Ottawa chieftain, was born about 1720, and first became prominent in the strife between the British and the French about the year 1760, at the present site of the city of Cleveland. The date inscribed upon this pipe is about the time that Pontiac was most active in the destruction of the British holdings in Ohio and Michigan, and it was sometime after May, 1763, that Pontiac's followers took the British post at Sandusky, Ohio. About all we can say of this relic is that if it is genuine, it is certainly a piece of extraordinary interest.

The two remaining pipes in Plate 5, on the bottom row, appear to have come from British Columbia, as the materials used, and the carved figures, resemble work done by the Indians of that region.

In Plate 6 are shown a few copper implements, all found in Michigan with the exception of the long spearhead in the center. The top one in the left row is a chisel, found in Hillsdale County. The second piece in this row, another chisel of slightly different form, or perhaps a "skinning stone," was



Plate 6.—Copper Spearheads and Skinning Stones from Michigan and Wisconsin

found in Medina Township, Lenawee County. The two spearheads at the top and bottom of the right row show what is probably the most common method of hafting found in copper spearheads in Michigan. The other method, somewhat more complicated, is that of bending the bottom of the spearhead around the end of the shaft to which it is to be hafted. The long point between the two vertical rows was found on the border of a small lake in Forest County, Wisconsin. With the exception of the second piece from the top in the right row, the surfaces of these copper implements present a rough and mottled appearance, streaked with the green which characterizes copper when exposed to corrosion. The American Indians, at the time of the discovery of the New World had no knowledge of the art of casting metals, and the few implements and ornaments of copper, gold and silver which they made were beaten into shape. This fact accounts for the rough surface which characterizes most of the copper artifacts that are found. The copper celt, or chisel, in the middle of the left row was evidently rather hastily made, or else the maker did not possess a great amount of skill, for the pointed end of the piece is somewhat "frayed" out, showing that several thin layers and small lumps of the metal were hammered together. The arrow, or spearhead in the middle of the right row is an interesting piece inasmuch as it is obviously a copy of an arrowhead of flint, and for this reason we might conclude that this was one of the earliest attempts at making use of the new material. However, the surface of this piece is suspiciously smooth, and there is none of the green copper oxide which it would undoubtedly have if it had lain long on or beneath the surface of the ground. Moreover, the surface of this piece closely resembles the commercial sheets of rolled copper in thickness and color. It is possible however to test the genuineness of this, or of any copper implement, for the Indians obtained the native copper from surface exposures of that metal on Isle Royale, in Lake Superior, and possibly at certain places in the Upper Peninsula, and since this native copper contains a certain amount of silver, which is extracted in the commercial

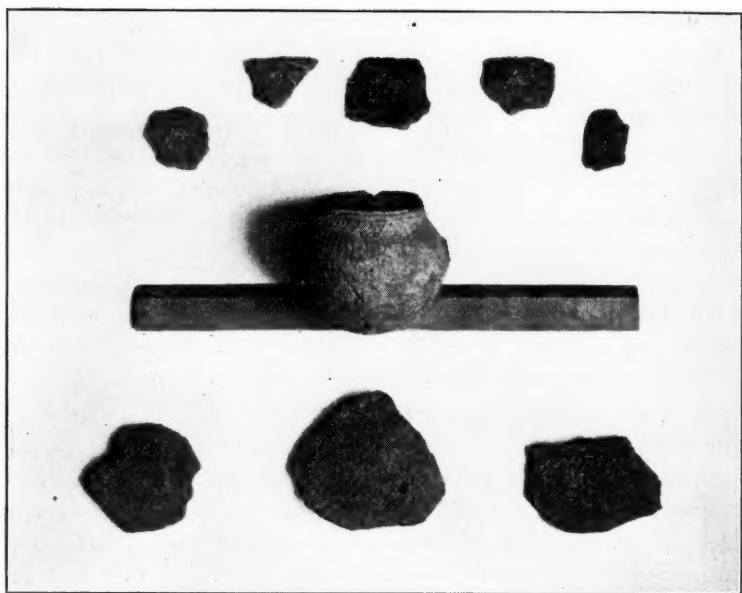


Plate 7.—A small Algonquian Pot, or "Cup," and several fragments of larger vessels. Michigan

product, the implements made by the Indians will reveal their origin when subjected to a proper examination.

In Plate 7 are shown a number of potsherds, and one nearly complete pot, from the lower peninsula of Michigan. Little can be said of these pieces individually, except that they are all of the Algonquian type, including the whole vessel. This brings us to the question of just what is meant by the term "Algonquian." It is simply a linguistic appellation, characterizing a group of Indians, one of the largest in North America, the several tribes of which spoke dialects of the same language, in contradistinction to the Siouan and Iroquoian groups, for example, each of which spoke a different language, by the side of which were practiced different methods of making and decorating pottery, of working stone and bone, and even differences of social custom. The Algonquians of Michigan were the Ottawa, Chippewa, Potawatomie and a number of other smaller groups, all speaking dialects of the Algonquian language, just as in the state of New York the Iroquois were divided into the Seneca, Mohawk, Onondaga, Erie and so forth, each living more or less permanently in a certain region and speaking dialects of the Iroquoian language. The archaeology of New York has been so completely worked out that it is now not only possible to distinguish with certainty between pieces of pottery made by the Iroquois and Algonquians of that part of the country, but also to say whether a given potsherd, providing it shows some of the decoration, was made by one or another of the Iroquois sub-groups. In the same manner it will soon be possible to tell whether a piece of pottery found in Michigan was made by the Ottawa, Chippewa, Potawatomie, Sauk, or any of the other of the Algonquian sub-groups which formerly occupied this region, and in this way we shall come to know much more about the prehistoric localities and migrations of these peoples than we know at present. Potsherds therefore, are of first importance in the scientific study of Michigan archaeology, and while it may seem that the pots and pans of a bygone age are much less interesting than their ornaments, and implements of warfare and the chase, a collec-

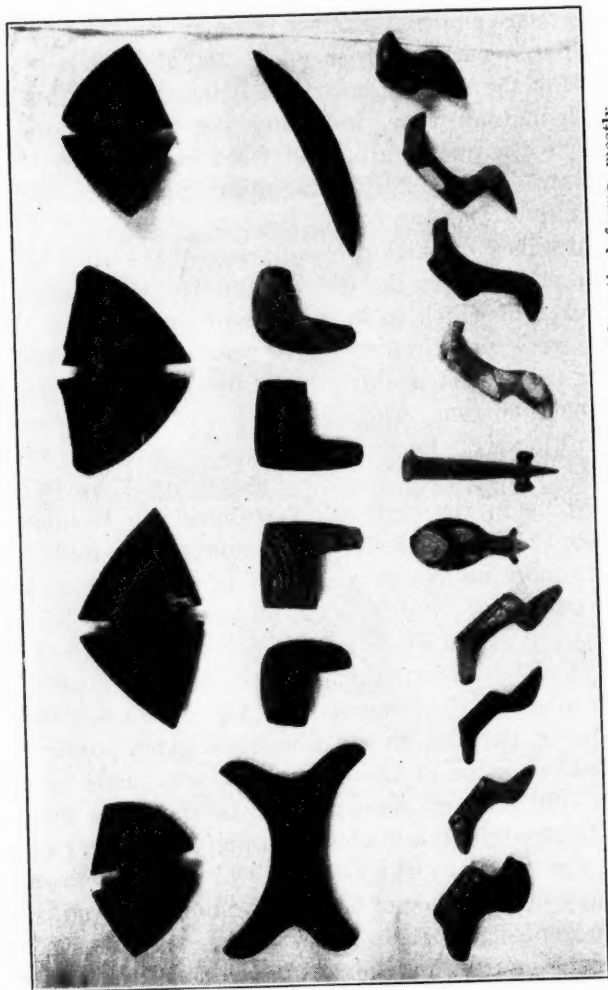


Plate 8.—Butterflystones and Birdstones, and other problematical forms, mostly from Michigan

tion of these fragments of decorated clay is nevertheless full of detail and variety, and they have the added value that they offer clues to the identity and habits of their makers to a greater extent than any other articles which make up the majority of public and private collections.

The Algonquians restricted the use of decoration on pottery to the rim, and one or two inches below on the outside. Occasionally a design is found inside of the rim down the inside of the vessel for half an inch or so. The pattern was generally stamped into the soft clay with a stick before the vessel was put on a fire to harden. Frequently a design was carved at the end of the stick which was pressed into the rim of the vessel all the way around. In Plate 7 the five fragments on the top row are from the rims of the original vessels and all show characteristic Algonquian decorative motives. The little pot, or "cup" in the middle of the picture is a very rare piece, since the action of heat and frost in the ground generally cracks whole pots into small pieces, and in the southern part of the state the plow has been even more destructive in this regard. The three pieces on the bottom row are from the body of the vessel and show the "fabric" mark, which in some cases at least, is due to the practice of modelling the vessel inside of a bark basket of the desired shape, which is destroyed when the pot is put in the fire to bake.

Plate 8 shows a group of those beautifully polished slate pieces which are so common in Michigan, Ohio and lower Canada, consisting of a great variety of shapes of which only a few are here represented. These slate objects are usually referred to as "problematical" forms, which, unlike most designative terms is not descriptive, but interrogatory, since all it means is that we know little or nothing about the purposes for which they were used, when they were used or made, and by whom. Regarding the latter however they are found almost exclusively in the territory formerly occupied by Algonquian peoples, and it seems probable that they were made by them in prehistoric times. They are divisible into two classes on the basis of form, those representing birds, possibly ducks,

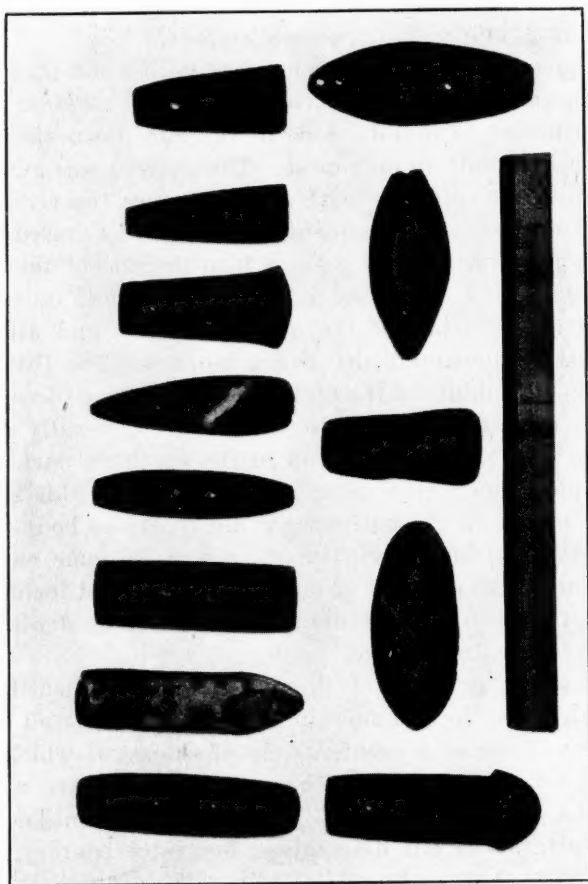


Plate 9.—Gorgets and Pendants, or "Talley-Stones," of Banded Slate

in a conventionalized form, and those whose shapes are purely arbitrary and without meaning to anyone who has never seen them in use. In the latter class are the so-called "butterfly-stones," four of which are shown in the illustration on the bottom row. These pieces do resemble butterflies on the wing, no doubt, but to a much less degrees than the "bird-stones," shown in the top row, resemble birds, and it is a possibility that the "butterfly-stones" are simply highly conventionalized axes, a kind of ceremonial axe. Here there is a rather serious objection however, for so far as is known, the American Indians did not perforate their stone axes for hafting. Certainly these pieces, many of which have sharp edges, do not show any signs of use in cutting or chopping.

The four pieces in the middle row which look like the heads of golf clubs are a very common form, resembling no natural object which might offer a clue to their use. All but the one on the left end are perforated about at the middle of the horizontal part, and a shallow groove runs the length of the vertical arm on the inside, that is, in the piece at the right end, the groove is on the right side. The piece on the left end is apparently an unfinished one, as it has no hole drilled in the horizontal part. Because of the perforations and the grooves which are almost invariable features of these pieces, it is probable that they represent but a part of some implement or ornament made of wood, bone or some other perishable material, the use of which we might readily understand if we could but find such a piece complete.

In Plates 9 and 10 are a number of "gorgets" and "pendants," which, so far as the material of which they are made, and their apparent lack of use for any practical purpose, are concerned, belong in the class of problematical forms with the "bird-stones" and "butterfly-stones." Like the latter, they are almost always made of banded slate, as may be seen in the illustrations. They are rarely more than three-eighths of an inch in thickness and are always ground down to a fine polish. A large number of purposes have been advanced to explain the use of these perforated slates, since they are not so readily



Plate 10.—Some unusual Ceremonial Banded Slates, mostly Michigan

referred to ceremonial or ornamental practices as the bird-stones and butterfly-stones. They are sometimes called "tally-stones," from the fact that many of them are marked with small incisions along the edges, sometimes part way, and sometimes all the way around, and it has been thought that these marks, cut in by a harder material than slate, were records of some sort, since it is not beyond reason that the Indian in his primitive state should find it expedient to keep records, particularly of the passage of time, whereby it is not impossible that these slate forms are primitive calendar-stones, the incisions representing days, months or years, as the case may be. Since a record is of no value unless its permanence and preservation are assured, perforations were made in these stones through which a thong was passed for suspension around the neck, or other part of the body, and the simple fact that these "talley-marks," if such they are, were made in stone, is perhaps a good indication of an intention to make them permanent. Another plausible explanation of the use of some of the smaller of these slates is that they were tied to the inner side of the wrist for protection against the snap of the bow-string as the arrow is released. The two small two-holed pieces in Plate 10 are of a size which would be most convenient for such use.

Possibly another clue to the use of these stones is the prevalence of the "bull-roarer" among primitive peoples. A "bull-roarer" is a thin, flat piece of wood varying in general proportions about as much as the stones in the top row of Plate 9, but considerably larger, from a foot to two or three feet in length, and proportionately wide. A string about 6 feet long is fastened to one end of the piece of wood, through a hole, and it is then whirled about in the air with a resulting roar much like that of an aeroplane propeller, but with less volume. These instruments were formerly, and are at the present time to some extent, used by the Australian Bushmen, in many of the South Sea Islands, in parts of Europe and Asia and in North and South America. They are in use at present in Western Europe and the British Isles as toys, and no doubt many people in the United States are familiar with them. The purposes for which

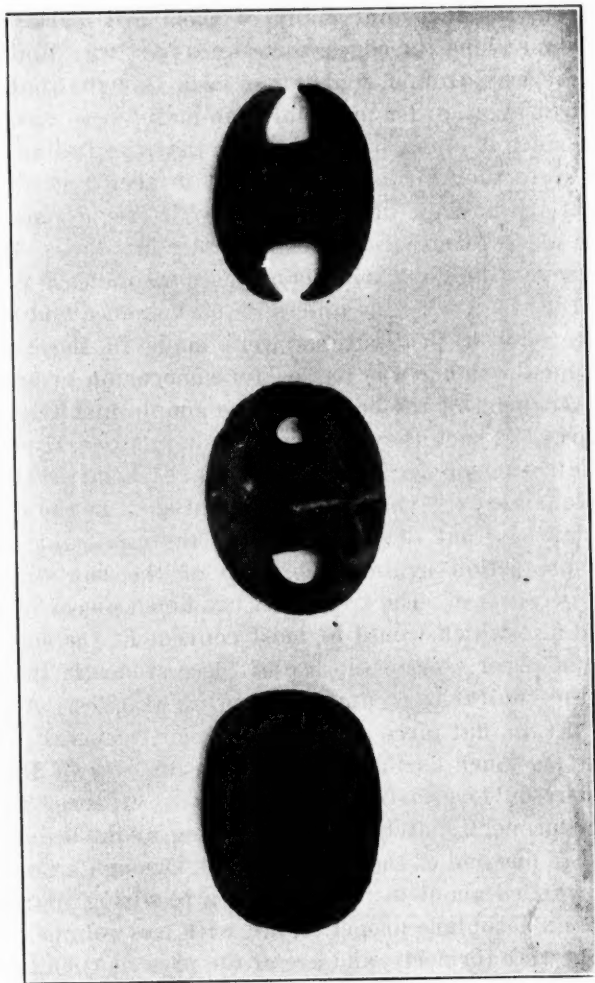


Plate 11.—Three stages in the manufacture of a Slate Ceremonial. The piece in the middle was found in Ohio, and the other two in Michigan

these "bull-roarers" were used by primitive peoples were both ceremonial and practical. The natives of South Africa used them to drive their cattle, the explanation being that the noise made by whirling the piece of wood resembled the sound of a fly which was particularly obnoxious to the cattle. The native blacks of Australia used the "bull-roarer" as a magical means of bringing rain, and also in certain ceremonies of a religious nature, the whir and roar of the instrument symbolizing to them the voice of their deity, whom they called "Darumulun." In the United States, the Indians of the southwest used the "bull-roarer" as a means of producing rain and were very confident of its success, if for no other reason than that they were careful not to whirl the instrument except just before a good shower. However that may be, the fact that primitive peoples are known to have preserved such instruments as these in a different material for ceremonial purposes, gives considerable basis for the explanation of these slate gorgets and pendants as "ceremonial" bull-roarers. Made of slate of course they have lost their property of "roaring," when whirled but to the spiritual needs of the savage that is not essential, since by their shape, they may have stood as symbols of whatever magical meaning the "roaring" had for them originally.

In Plate 11 is a very interesting series consisting of three stages in the manufacture of a double crescent. The finished piece of the series is at the right of the picture, and resembles the butterfly-stones in Plate 8 in having a hole, about half an inch in diameter, through the stem connecting the two "horns." It is probable that this double crescent is but a variety in form of the butterfly-stone, and was used for the same purpose. The piece at the left in Plate 11 shows an early stage of the process in which one hole is only partially completed, and the drilling for the hole at the opposite end has been started but has not yet perforated the stone. The surface of this piece has been ground to some extent, but it is yet very rough, although in places it has been worn down sufficiently to show the bands in the slate. In the middle piece the holes have been drilled so that something of the final shape may be seen. The surface

of this piece has been worn down to a smooth, dull polish, dark red in color, with markings in white, as may be seen in the illustration. In both of these unfinished pieces the middle, or "stem" has been left thicker than the rest, for the hole which in the piece to the right, transverses its length, and in which the piece was probably hafted. The interest and value of these three pieces are considerably heightened by the fact that they were not found together.

There are many other interesting articles of aboriginal manufacture in the Museum collection, and additions are constantly being made from all parts of the State. The stone implements and ornaments which we have discussed were without doubt made by the Indians in prehistoric times, or at any rate before there was contact with the European invaders of a sufficient duration to enable the Indians to borrow and copy the implements which they brought with them.

The collection contains a number of articles such as copper kettles, wooden spoons and scoops, iron axes and tomahawks and ornaments of silver and brass which are representative of the "transitional" period during which the Europeans had been in this region long enough to exert an influence upon the arts and crafts of the aborigines. The Indians of Michigan are yet, to some extent, in this transitional period, and their present culture is a strange, albeit sufficient, mixture of elements from their own prehistoric life, from the pioneer times which are so well represented in the Museum, and from the present. They have borrowed liberally from our stock of customs and usages and have doubtless been benefited thereby, and in the same manner we ourselves have taken over many elements from their culture which we would be under considerable difficulty to replace if they were taken away.

## HISTORICAL NOTES

THE prize contest for boys and girls announced in the January number for the best 200 word letter on "The Article I like best in the Michigan History Magazine" was won by John Makinen, a student in the Ripley School at Hancock, Michigan. The article John liked best was "The Experiences of a Mining Engineer," by Mr. James E. Jopling of Marquette, which was published in the April number, 1927. The prize offered was a two volume set of Wood's *Historic Mackinac*.

We wish you a good time, John, reading this story of Michigan's world famous summer play-ground, and when you find another article in the Michigan History Magazine that specially interests you, we hope you will write to us again.

---

IN honor of the centennial of the founding of the first historical society in Michigan at Detroit in 1828 the State Historical Society will meet this year in Detroit. The meeting will be held at the Detroit-Leland hotel, April 12. This will be a joint meeting with the Detroit Historical Society, and the program will be introduced by a dinner to be given in the ball room of the hotel at 6:30 p. m. Detroit time, to which all persons interested in the history of Michigan are cordially invited.

The principal event of the evening will be an address by Prof. Louis C. Karpinski of the University of Michigan who is a specialist in map study. He will speak upon his experiences during a recent trip to Europe in search of manuscript maps of America in France, Spain and Portugal. It is understood that his finds in these archives are exceedingly important and some of them throw new light upon the early mapping of the Great Lakes region and the Upper Mississippi valley. Those who have heard Prof. Karpinski in any of his map talks will not forget the charm of romance which his enthusiasm for these antique historical treasures throws about the picturesque features of our pioneer history.

Following the address there will be discussions of this and related fields of historical work, introduced by Mr. Clarence M. Burton, president of the Detroit Historical Society. Regent William L. Clements, president of the state organization will preside for the evening, and the meeting will be open for all who have thoughtful contributions to make to the discussions.

Detroit has been the home of many "firsts," and may well be proud of being the home of the first state historical society in Michigan. This society was officially christened "The Historical Society of Michigan," and was incorporated by act of the Territorial Legislature approved June 23, 1828.

Lewis Cass was the first president, and the members of the legislature were made by the incorporating act ex-officio members of the society.

Besides Lewis Cass, other Detroit citizens most interested were Henry R. Schoolcraft, Henry Whiting, John Biddle, and Douglass Houghton. The first annual addresses were given by these men, and were published by the society in a little volume which is now very rare, called *Historical and Scientific Sketches of Michigan* (Detroit, 1834).

An imposing roll of honorary members adorned this society, which included John Quincy Adams, Martin Van Buren, John C. Calhoun, Daniel Webster, Bancroft the historian, Washington Irving, James Fenimore Cooper, Henry W. Longfellow, Maria Edgeworth and Lady Morgan of Ireland, and Harriet Martineau and the Countess of Blessington of England, leading literary and political lights of the United States and Great Britain who had visited Detroit or were interested through correspondence with Detroit citizens.

Despite this distinguished membership the society seems to have had a somewhat checkered career. Men of our pioneer days were too busy making history to have much time to write it. From 1828 to 1832 meetings were fairly regular, but no records can be found for the five years following. The admission of Michigan to the Union in 1837 gave it a fresh impulse. The Civil War in 1861 made serious interruption.

Interesting is the scope of the work of this early society. In 1857 when a revival of activity took place there were standing committees on civil history, judicial and legal history, ecclesiastical history, Indian history, natural history, educational history, agricultural and horticultural history, statistical and economic history, surveying, engineering, roads and canals, mineralogy, biography and genealogy, books, manuscripts and autographs, and arts and sciences.

The most enduring work which the society achieved was to collect and preserve numerous papers and manuscripts some of which later came into possession of the Detroit Public Library and have been published in the 39 volumes of the *Michigan Historical Collections*.

A valuable collection of museum relics was also made, but unfortunately this collection seems to have been scattered during the years when interest lagged. There seems to have been no permanent depository. It appears that in 1857 all of the society's collections were in the office of General Henry T. Whiting of the United States Army. It is said that on his being ordered to a distant post there occurred a mistake of his agent which resulted in many of these articles being sold. The story of the dissolution of this collection is told in Volume 12 of the *Michigan Historical Collections*.

A marked revival of the historical spirit in Michigan came with the centennial of the Declaration of Independence in 1876. In 1874 "The Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan" was organized, with headquarters at Lansing. In 1877 appeared the first of the series of the *Michigan Historical Collections* published by this society, embodying a great variety of material—pioneer reminiscences, biographical sketches, memorials, papers read at the state and local historical societies, and important collections of documents both of public and private origin—making in all the present 39 volumes. In 1924 the society celebrated its semi-centennial with a notable program given in the Senate chamber at the Capitol in Lansing, and this is the state organization that will meet in Detroit, April 12.

The publishing activities of the society were taken over in 1913 by the Michigan Historical Commission, which was organized as a state department especially for the publishing of source materials.

Among the presidents of the society have been prominent public men, representing all sections of the state. They are as follows:

Albert Miller, Bay City, 1874-1875  
Oliver C. Comstock, Marshall, 1875-1876  
Jonathan Shearer, Plymouth, 1876-1877  
Witter J. Baxter, Jonesville, 1877-1878  
John J. Adam, Tecumseh, 1878-1879  
Michael Shoemaker, Jackson, 1879-1880  
Hezekiah G. Wells, Kalamazoo, 1880-1881  
John C. Holmes, Detroit, 1881-1882  
Charles I. Walker, Detroit, 1882-1884  
Francis A. Dewey, Cambridge, 1884-1885  
Henry Fralick, Grand Rapids, 1885-1886  
Merchant H. Goodrich, Ann Arbor, 1886-1887  
Talcott E. Wing, Monroe, 1887-1889  
Orrin Poppleton, Birmingham, 1889-1890  
John H. Forster, Williamston, 1890-1892  
Alpheus Felch, Ann Arbor, 1892-1896  
Cyrus G. Luce, Coldwater, 1897-1901  
Clarence M. Burton, Detroit, 1901-1914.  
Clarence E. Bement, Lansing, 1914-1916  
Augustus C. Carton, Lansing, 1916-1920  
Gerrit Van Schelven, Holland, 1920-1921  
Alvah L. Sawyer, Menominee, 1921-1923  
William L. Jenks, Port Huron, 1923-1925  
William L. Clements, Bay City, 1925-

In the busy years since the organization of the first historical society the people of Michigan have been so absorbed in developing our resources that they have not had time for leisurely contemplation of the history the state has been making. This meeting in Detroit should lead to a wider interest in this rich back-ground of Michigan's life.

Editor Michigan History Magazine,

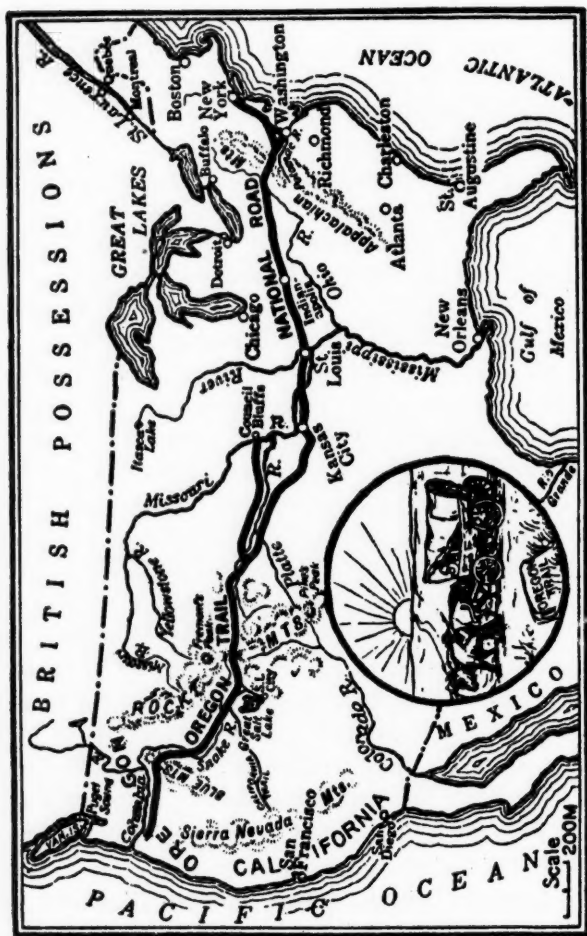
**U**NDER the direction of the department of History of Education of the University of Michigan, I am preparing a history of Early Secondary Education in Michigan giving special attention to the academy movement. In this history many Michigan cities should have an important place since they were pioneers educationally from early days.

The following is suggestive of the type of information desired:—(a) The teaching force—its education, ideals, etc. (b) Course of study (c) Methods of instruction (d) Text-books (e) Discipline (f) Social life (g) Literary societies (h) Chapel exercises and assemblies (i) Public recitals (j) Inter-school and intra-school contests both educational and athletic (k) The school newspaper either written or printed (l) The student body—accomplishments, aims, ages, etc. (m) Type and plan of school building (n) Equipment—apparatus, furniture, books, maps, etc. (o) Requirements for admission (p) Graduation exercises (q) Administration and supervision.

The material needed is not readily available, but must be gathered from old newspapers, diaries, old records, handbooks, and personal interviews with old citizens. Will you please insert this notice in the Michigan History Magazine asking your readers to cooperate in this work. Pride in their local school will prompt them to respond, and incidentally their efforts will add to their own prestige by promoting a piece of work of great value to their own community and to the state as a whole. The material can be obtained in no other way, and as Professor Jackson says, it will be almost impossible to obtain it twenty years from now.

May the University count on your readers to do the following three things at their earliest possible convenience:—(1) Have their local newspapers insert this request. (2) Make the announcement to their superintendent of schools asking his aid. (3) Record in a note-book all information concerning sources, addresses of old citizens, etc., for me to see when I come.

As soon as they have had time to obtain a response to their



The Oregon Trail

notices I shall make an effort to visit their city to interview citizens and to make a study of any materials available.

J. O. GRIMES,  
Ypsilanti, Mich.

---

Readers of this Magazine are invited to correspond directly with Mr. Grimes upon this subject.—Ed.

---

Dear Editor,

FOR twenty years my purpose in life has been to recover and mark the Oregon Trail which I first traversed with my wife and babe in 1852. In all the wealth of romance that attaches to pioneering there is nothing more stirring than the winning of the west by the great army of homebuilders who took possession of the Oregon Country, established a provisional government and compelled the Hudson Bay Company to cease their rule with the result that the Treaty of 1846 with Great Britain finally settled the long contention as to the ownership of the Oregon Country and made this vast territory a part of our nation.

A little more than a year ago, after a thorough investigation Congress passed a Bill authorizing the issuance of six million memorial coins exclusively to the Association by the United States Government, upon payment of their legal face value of fifty cents. The coins are sold for \$1.00 each. It is now my desire to raise a fund by popular subscription to cover the cost of the work so that the fifty cent gain from the sale of each coin may be placed into a trust fund which will be allowed to accumulate until the sum of \$200,000 is reached and then used to carry out the objects of the Association. The budget is very modest; the cause worthy; the contribution to the history of the nation fundamental and I am sure the sentiment of honoring these pioneer mothers and fathers will commend itself to the attention of your readers.

This is a wholly altruistic work; I have given many years of my life to it; a son of Ohio—born near Hamilton—1830—still on my pegs and hope to be until this great work is finished.

Would not some of your readers like to join in promoting this cause by purchase of one or more of these coins? Will you please ascertain whether any of them are descendants of the Pioneers who traversed the Oregon Trail subsequent to 1832? We are gathering historical data and this information will be of great value.

EZRA MEEKER

President Oregon Trail Memorial  
Association, 95 Madison Ave.  
New York City.

---

THE report of the Recording-secretary of the Marquette County Historical Society, Miss Olive Pendill, shows that for the year which closed on January 10, 1928, there were 113 active members, and five life members. The life members include the Cleveland-Cliffs Iron Company, the Calumet and Hecla Consolidated Copper Company, Mr. and Mrs. George Shiras, 3rd, and Bishop P. J. Nussbaum of the Diocese of Sault Ste. Marie.

The annual report of the Curator, Miss Olive Pendill, shows the following additions to the library of the society: 85 books, 33 pamphlets, 14 manuscripts, 2 maps, 11 periodicals, 9 newspapers.

The society's library now contains 661 books, 536 pamphlets, 761 manuscripts, 93 maps, 31 periodicals, 71 newspapers.

The museum has been increased by a few photographs, a wooden fork made and used by the Kabawgam family, and a copper arrowhead found at Lake Independence.

The H. M. Longyear Collections have been listed separately. Its library contains 43 books, 40 pamphlets, 539 manuscripts, 80 maps, 2 periodicals, 10 newspapers. In the museum are coins, currency, Indian implements, rocks, tokens, war-time buttons and posters, 1038 photographs, 297 photographic plates, 30 lantern slides, and some additional photographs whose origin and name cannot be ascertained.

The latest addition to the library of the society is a volume entitled *The Lake Superior Country* by T. M. Longstreth, published by the Century Company in 1924.

The list of officers for the ensuing year is as follows: President, Dr. T. A. Felch, Ishpeming; vice-presidents, H. A. Clark, Marquette; W. H. Moulton, Ishpeming; H. S. Doolittle, Negaunee; Mrs. Carroll Paul, Marquette; Treasurer, T. M. Redmond, Marquette; Curator, J. E. Jopling, Marquette; Recording-secretary, Miss Priscilla Densmore, Marquette; Corresponding-secretary, L. A. Chase, Marquette.

The society voted to hold its annual meeting hereafter on the third Tuesday of January.

A most interesting and attractive exhibit of specimens of foreign handicraft in silver and other metals, wood, cloths, etc., many of them extremely artistic, was held at the same time and place of holding the annual meeting. It was arranged by Mrs. J. E. Lautner of Marquette as special assistant to the Curator. The exhibit remained open to public inspection during the remainder of the week and was visited by large crowds day and evening. Two Finnish women exemplified the operation of a spinning-wheel, which is still occasionally found in use among these people in the Upper Peninsula.

The report of society activities for the past year showed that assistance had been rendered the Marquette County Highway Commission in the preparation of historical road markers which will be erected next season, while its catalogue has been prepared for publication.

---

ON February 8 there took place in Lansing the second meeting of "Greater Michigan, Incorporated," an association of state organizations devoted to the development of Michigan's resources. Some 45 delegates were present, representing 30 statewide organizations, to discuss plans for work. Leading among these were the Upper Peninsula Development Bureau, East Michigan Tourist Association, and the Michigan Tourist and Resort Association.

✓  
387

For "harmony meetings" this was a winner. No one who was present to catch the inspiration of this meeting can have any doubt of the success of "Greater Michigan, Incorporated."

The association was organized in December, 1927, and the officers elected at that time were at this meeting continued: president, George E. Bishop of Marquette; secretary, Hugh J. Gray of Grand Rapids; treasurer, Thomas F. Marston of Bay City. Officers serve without pay.

Among the addresses of the occasion, Mr. Roger M. Andrews, publisher of the Detroit Times made a stirring appeal for the wider reading and study of Michigan history. He made a plea for a "Greater Michigan Day," in which the schools, the clubs, the churches, the press, and other organizations might bring to the attention of Michigan people the great natural advantages of the state as a recreation center. He paid a warm tribute to the press of Michigan for its work in bringing these to wide attention, and described the methods used by other states in making known nationwide their various resources. He stressed especially the point that every person in Michigan can not but benefit ultimately from the service of "Greater Michigan, Incorporated," and that this organization should be supported heartily and unitedly by all citizens of the state.

Michigan is only some hundred years "out of the back woods" as it were; her vast resources in soil, timber, minerals, and manufacturing are still in the early process of development seeking world markets; Grand Rapids has just reached the centennial of her furniture market, known world wide; Michigan's automobile industry has "put the world on wheels"; lake commerce brings from our northland and the Middle West an increasing stream of products and a deep waterway to the ocean has become more than a dream; good roads have opened all parts of the state to tourists, and our own people within the state move freely among each other. With the tourist business now the second industry of the state, "Greater Michigan, Incorporated" is out to promote this business, and in the strength of union it can not but succeed. For many years

Chambers of Commerce and resort interests have worked together with development bureaus and other agencies to advertise Michigan to the nation and to the world. The heading up of these agencies in a single body which can do for them what they can not well individually do for themselves, seems a natural step. The relation of business prosperity to the command and enjoyment of those cultural and spiritual values which are expressed in American ideals, is obvious.

In this light it seems not improper to speak of the state's "capitalizing" its history. Tourists are of course interested in the history of localities they visit. The charm of romance hovers about stories of the primitive environment of early days, the "Mound Builders," the Indians, the early explorers, the missionaries, the fur traders, the soldiers at the forest forts, the border wars, and the pioneers of agricultural settlement, mining, manufacturing and commerce, in which may be found all the elements of a romantic past in Michigan. Historical knowledge of use and enjoyment of tourists might be promoted by strengthening the local historical societies, marking historic spots, celebrating historic events, collecting museum relics into the local library or school, providing the press with local stories of interest about people and places, and enlisting the interest of young people in the schools to gather and study their local history. An historical handbook of the locality such as might easily be prepared by the effort of young people of the schools under proper direction, would be of much interest to visitors whether tourists from other states or from our own, and this has been done for a number of places. A "Greater Michigan, Incorporated," Day might easily be combined with "Michigan Day," January 26, the date of the state's admission to the Union; coming this early it would provide an initial impulse for the resort season; the idea of such a Day seems worthy of best thought and encouragement.

LAST summer the Goodrich Transit Company, which operates a fleet of passenger steamers on the Great Lakes, made Fayette, Delta County, a port of call. It was led to do so by the rare scenic beauty of the spot and the presence of old but still useable harbor facilities, especially docks. There was a camp of college girls from Chicago maintained nearby throughout the season and the steamship service was much used by those attending this camp. It was apparent, however, that the real significance of the ruins still standing at Fayette was quite unknown to these tourists, and it was this that suggested to officers of the Marquette County Historical Society the preparation of an historical sketch of the place, which was undertaken by Mr. J. E. Jopling of Marquette, who was exceptionally well placed to do the work. Mr. Jopling's paper was recently read at the annual meeting of the Marquette County Historical Society and a copy was sent to the Goodrich Transit Company. Mr. Park Robbins, passenger traffic manager of this company, has warmly acknowledged the receipt of this bit of history and given assurances that it will be used by him in preparing the company's publicity for next season's cruises of his line. All of which goes to show how a local historical society can be of service in the development of the Upper Peninsula.

Following is Mr. Jopling's paper:

On the North shore of Lake Michigan, some twenty miles East of Escanaba and towards the Straits of Mackinac, lies a peninsula in the townships of Garden and Fairbanks, Delta County, and along the west side of the Big Bay de Noc is Fayette. The road for a distance of some thirty miles from north to south, through this peninsula, leaves the highway known as U. S. No. 2 some fifteen miles west of Manistique and passes through the village of Garden, then along the coast near Fayette, from which point it continues through alternate woodlands and farms towards the southern extremity where are situated Sac Bay and Fairport.

The land surface is fairly level with stretches of good farming land, but there is much that is hilly and stony, which has

upon it a fair growth of young timber, but the chief variety of the scenery are the ridges of limestone rising to a height of one hundred feet or more. This limestone constitutes the underlying rock of the peninsula and its varying hardness is the basis for its topography from the fertile fields to its stony hills and to its bluffs which give such picturesque scenes along its coast.

The original timber on the peninsula consisted of fine old trees of maple, birch and beech and in the lower lands a variety of evergreen soft woods. The first settlers came some eighty years ago, taking up homesteads where they made clearings in the forests. Before that time there were only occasional fur traders and fishermen and explorers who found a small population of Indians.

The principal settlement was made at Fayette by the Jackson Iron Company owning mines in Negaunee. This company was attracted to this peninsula by the immense forest of hardwood, of which they acquired 16,000 acres for the purpose of making charcoal for smelting their ore and making pig iron. The construction of a furnace was commenced in May, 1867, under the management of J. H. Harris and the first iron was made on Christmas day of the same year. The furnace was located on a small bay named by the early explorers Snail Shell Harbor. It was conveniently situated for receiving the iron ore from the port of Escanaba and for shipping the pig iron to the lower lake ports.

The furnace commenced operations with a single stack but a second one was completed in 1870, which increased the product from about five thousand to over ten thousand tons per year. A railway was constructed running south from the furnace at Fayette as far as what was known as Summer Island Kilns beyond Fairport. A number of these kilns of beehive shape, used for making charcoal, are to be found along the line of the abandoned railway.

The furnaces went out of blast about 1892 and were dismantled. Limestone was used for the buildings, including the casthouses, store and machine shop, charcoal kilns and one lime

kiln. The dwellings, which were of wooden construction, have been kept in good repair by the Cleveland Cliffs Iron Company, which in 1905 bought all the property of the Jackson Iron Company. The boarding house is now a hotel and about fifteen of the cottages are used by tourists during the summer months. These cottages are furnished, not only with beds, chairs and tables, but also with cooking stoves. There are a number of unfurnished cottages and in all there are about 26 habitable buildings. All of these are situated on a promontory with an elevation of twenty to forty feet above the waters of this arm of Lake Michigan and delightfully shaded, not only by a number of hardwood trees, but with thickets of cedar and arborvitae. The lake breezes keep this point free from flies. To the south and west is the lake and to the north is the small harbor with its old docks providing landing places not only for small boats but also the lake steamers.

Across the harbor is a limestone cliff a quarter of a mile long rising out of the water to a height of some sixty feet and above it a hill covered with timber. This picturesque scene is admired by all and has helped to establish the popularity of Fayette as a tourist resort. The shore consists of limestone pebbles so that it is not much used by bathers who prefer the sandy beach some half mile away.

On the land side there are a number of old clearings and an old base ball park now used as pastures, but which might be developed into a golf course. Here a variety of flowers and shrubs may be found, including some butternut trees.

About six miles to the north of Fayette is the village of Garden and Van's Harbor. The village has a population of about four hundred. There is the Garden State Bank and also a sanitarium built of hollow tile for cases of cancer and conducted by Mr. Edward La Motte. There is a hotel but it is now closed. The village was started about 1880 when a saw mill was built by Mr. Van Winkle, after whom Van's Harbor was named. The mill was sold in 1897 to the Collins Lumber Company, which still owns much of the land near the village. This village is the headquarters of the farming population of

the peninsula. The principal crops are hay, oats, barley and peas, besides garden truck used locally. The number of farms is over one hundred.

Fairport is a fishing village at the south end of the Garden Peninsula and about 30 miles from the highway U. S. 2. It has a population of over one hundred. There is a small fleet of fishing tugs which makes this their port. Most of these are owned by A. D. Schawl of Sheboygan who fishes with pound nets. Other fishermen own tugs using gill nets. There are a number of wooden piers where the fish are landed and the buildings for packing them. Point Detour, four miles further, is the south end of the peninsula.

Near Fairport to the north is Sac Bay where live a few families which were among the early settlers. The farms have a number of orchards. Off the coast are a number of islands, including Summer, Little Summer and St. Martins. Near Sac Bay is the Mortarboard camp for girls.

The entire peninsula of Garden makes a very interesting place for summer visitors with its varied scenery of woods, farms and coast line, and to which might be added the interesting facts of its early history shown by the signs of former occupations.

---

Dear Editor,

I WONDER if your readers might be interested in an auto trip which I made with my husband through the Upper Peninsula of Michigan in 1923. Anyway I am going to tell it to you, and you may print it if you like.

The history of the Upper Peninsula I think is the most fascinating of any region in the country. My husband makes this territory by auto once a year in his business trips and the chance to go with him gave me an opportunity to make quite a thorough tour of the Peninsula. Starting from our home in Hillsdale, Michigan, July 9, we went by way of the shore road on the east shore of Lake Michigan. The roads were fine and the scenery beautiful. The first and second nights were spent

in Battle Creek and Bangor. The next day the road was nearer to Lake Michigan and we began to see the hills that surround the Lake. Much has been written about "Snow Capped Mountains" but I never read anything about "Sand Capped Hills" and surely they have a beauty all their own, worth writing about. As we came into Saugatuck, by a road that curved often enough to make the head dizzy, we caught sight of the Sand Capped Hills long before we reached the village. They looked very beautiful with the white sand at the top and sometimes running down the sides, like a white stream through the green. It did not seem possible that anything could grow in such sand, yet green verdure and bushes covered most of the hills.

Before night we passed through surroundings not so beautiful or prosperous, in fact we wondered how the people could make a living. That night we stayed in Shelby, a small place with a very large Hotel which was full of tourists and traveling men. Evidently the surroundings had affected one homesick man, for every once in a while he broke out singing one verse of "The Wearing of the Green." "'Tis the most distressed country that ever I have seen, and they're hanging men and women for the wearing of the green." The next day we reached the western fruit belt and saw many vineyards, where the grape vines were in different ages, from the first roots set out, to the bearing age. We also began to see some cherry orchards before we reached Acadia where we spent the night. The place is rightly named and some time in the past must have seen very prosperous times. We were struck with the size of its buildings, both business and residential. We went from there to several towns on Crystal Lake, Elberta, Frankfort and Benzonia where we spent the night at a tea house run by the daughter of a Chicago doctor. She told us that she came to the place through talking with a lady whom we knew in our home town who is running a summer camp for girls in Benzonia. Meeting people while away from home, who know the home folks, always makes the world seem small. We were more impressed with this fact as we went on.

We spent Sunday in Traverse City and took dinner with a friend, who went with us on what is called the Peninsula Drive forty miles up to Old Mission and back, through beautiful scenery with the bay on one side, and orchard after orchard of cherries all ripe for the picking on the other side. During our drive and visit our friend told us of her Sunday School Class of young married women, some of whom were wives of traveling men and often went with their husbands on business trips. She also said she and her family were members of the Wequetong Club of Traverse City and after we returned to our Hotel we were not far from that Club House, so we walked over and found the caretaker was one of the city teachers, who also proved to be an old acquaintance of my husband in his teaching days, thirty-five years ago, or more. We spent Monday night at Kalkaska and met a Traveling man and his wife from Battle Creek and while our husbands made out their "orders" we walked around town and saw their very good looking Court House, School Building and Post Office. We came by the shore of Torch Lake for about twenty miles, on our way to East Jordan and Boyne City. The road by the water was very beautiful. Since starting from home we had eaten our lunch at noon either in a tourist camp or under some shade tree. It gave me something to run around town for. While my husband made the Hardware, Drygoods and Drug Stores on his business calls I went into restaurants, bakeries and groceries getting our lunch. At Boyne City the city park was also for *tourists*, and was a beautiful place on the bank of a little river flowing into Pine Lake. After our lunch, my husband had gone to the business section, I noticed at another table a young couple, and soon the man took a sample case and went down town. I went over and talked with his wife and found they were from Traverse City. I told her that we Sundayed there and mentioned the friend we took dinner with and she said, "Mrs. H— why she is my Sunday school teacher." When her husband returned I found his boyhood home was Onsted and his boy chum a son of a near neighbor on our street. Thus the smallness of the world.



Along M-12 between St. Ignace and Moran

We spent the next night in Charlevoix at the new Alhambra near the bay where we could see the big lake boats pass through the Draw Bridge. We went from there to Petoskey where we stayed all night and the next day were in all the summer resorts around Little Traverse Bay. I thought Bay View and Harbor Springs very pretty. We lunched in camp near Alanson where I picked beautiful roses. We noticed that the kinds of roses that were gone when we left home were in full bloom here. We stayed Friday night in Mackinaw City and Saturday morning went by boat to St. Ignace, the gate-way of the Upper Peninsula, a city of about 2000 inhabitants, the county seat of Mackinac County. It was founded in 1671 by Father Marquette, when he established a mission, which was abandoned in 1705, and from that time until May 4, 1878, Marquette's grave remained in obscurity; but today a monument, erected to the memory of the great missionary marks the spot. The famous oil painting which can be seen in St. Ignatius Church is said to have been brought to St. Ignace by Father Marquette. The painting represents St. Ignatius renouncing the World. It is told that when the church was destroyed the Indians hid the painting away and preserved it faithfully for many years.

We ate our lunch a few miles out of St. Ignace, just before we reached Castle Rock and had the pleasure of meeting some tourists from Chicago. They were going in the opposite direction from us and were equipped to sleep and eat their meals in camp. After this we passed through miles of dreary country but saw no houses until we reached Rockview, from there the land is either under cultivation or being cleared. Hessel, Cedarville and Pickford are summer resorts, not large enough to be renowned, still at Escanaba we met a party from Pennsylvania who had come by boat from Chicago and they were going on by auto to spend two weeks at Cedarville. We went from Pickford direct to Sault Ste. Marie. The same fascinating Indian history, upon which almost every community in the Upper Peninsula of Michigan is founded, marks the early days of Sault Ste. Marie. Here are also located the United States ship canals and locks, the greatest of their kind in the world.

After watching two large boats go down and one large boat go up through the locks we drove out to our cousins, who live on River Drive, Portage Street, where he has charge of the Lights on St. Mary's River. Here we stayed three days. We had our dinners on the porch where we could see the big lake boats go up and down the river. The men fished and we rode in the launch afternoons and evenings. When we again started on our way we wondered about that something about the Soo which makes one want to come back again.

We went from the Soo to Newberry which has two points of interest—the state hospital for the insane, which we passed on our way into the city, and the state forest reserve near the city, where can be found hundreds of acres of virgin timber. The next day we went to Manistique and “enjoyed” the first rain while on the road, although it had rained several times in the night and one whole day while we were in the Soo. Today it came in showers and a very hard one ushered us into Manistique. This city was in the path of those early French and Jesuit explorers, and at Indian Lake about four miles out there still remain the ruins of one of Father Marquette's missions as well as one of the early Indian burying grounds. It is said that Longfellow secured much of his material for his poem “Hiawatha” around Manistique. We still had the side curtains on as we left for Rapid River, which was fortunate as we passed through another shower; but it worked ill to me, as a bee flew into the car and stung me just under the eye, making me feel quite sick all night. We were told in Rapid River that they had sixteen flowing wells. We had noted how good the water was, in fact all the rest of our way over the peninsula we came so often to signs that read “Cold Spring” so many feet away, which makes it so nice for the tourist. We came through Gladstone, a model little city where are located some of Delta county's mills and manufacturing plants; the city has well kept streets and fine public buildings. We spent the night in Escanaba at the Ludington near the bay. Escanaba is the heart of extensive lumbering operations and ranks high as an industrial city and shipping point and has mammoth ore docks.

We passed through Trenary on our way to Marquette. To me this was one of the most attractive sections in the peninsula. The lofty and rugged hills of the iron country looked to be solid rock of many shades and colorings from the iron deposit. It made one think of old castle walls. The woods also were very beautiful. Ferns grew high and rank right to the edge of the road bed, and back of the ferns all kinds of bushes, many of the mountain ash full of red berries, then the three varieties of pine and other trees for background.

We stayed over Sunday in Marquette and visited Presque Isle, the play ground of the city and county; the name means "almost an island" jutting out into Lake Superior. Here nature is undisturbed and game is protected. The park has a dancing pavilion, picnic grounds and a "zoo." We also visited the grounds of Marquette State Prison. Monday forenoon I enjoyed watching the surf pounding on the shore at Marquette Park, where the city has placed a statue in honor of the missionary father.

We went from Marquette to Gwinn, often called Cloverland's "Model Town." One is at once impressed with the immaculate appearance of its smooth well kept streets, its clean brick buildings, modern residences and beautiful shade trees. Between Gwinn and Negaunee we picked "bunch berries" a plant I never saw except in the Upper Peninsula. It grows close to the ground and has a stem of red berries, in a bunch, surrounded with green leaves, only pretty to look at so far as I know, but grows in large patches making a very pretty sight.

We spent the night in Negaunee, which boasts a \$120,000 High School building, one of the most modern structures of its kind in Northern Michigan. Some of the largest iron producing mines in the Superior district are located near Negaunee. We ate our lunch the next day in Ishpeming Tourist camp and met people from Kalamazoo. We went out of our way to take in the little village of Republic, then went to L'Anse and spent the night. Near here is established the only Indian reservation in the Peninsula. Here a mere handful of descendants from proud tribes which once roamed the entire

peninsula, are living contentedly; eking out a living fishing and small farming. L'Anse spoken of in the past because of the Indians near it, at this time was booming from a lumber deal just in action. We stayed in a Hotel near Keweenaw Bay, it was also near the railroad used to bring the logs from the woods to the mill to be sawed. Everybody seemed busy, and new houses were going up all around, making everything look prosperous. At the Hotel we met a touring party from Lansing. They came in late in the evening and saw a big deer right in front of their car. He just stood and snorted; they had to turn off their lights to let him get away. We had hoped to see deer in the open, on our trip, but while others who rode early and late in the day, saw them, we never caught a glimpse of one. The next day we went around Keweenaw Bay to Baraga and Chassel on our way to Houghton and Hancock, twin cities in the Copper Country. When one speaks of the Copper Country he usually refers to Houghton and Keweenaw counties, but strictly speaking Baraga and Ontonagon counties have their part. Houghton is proud of the name of being the biggest village in America. It may also be classed among the wealthiest and has many beautiful residences, homes of those who have made their fortune from the copper mined in that region. Here also is located the Michigan College of Mines which is considered one of the best mining schools in the world. Students from this school have represented practically every nation in the world. Just across Portage entry from Houghton lies Hancock, the only organized city in the Copper country. Here is the one and only Finnish College and Theological Seminary in America. We stayed over night in Hancock and in the morning went to Calumet, another mining town of importance, with a \$250,000 High School rated third in importance among the High Schools of Michigan. From Calumet we drove to Eagle Harbor and ate our lunch on the shore of Lake Superior. We stopped in Ahmeek, a thriving little mining village, where we were told that "Ahmeek Mine never shuts down," which of course makes for prosperity. We returned to Calumet and spent the night. While we were

there we heard of President Harding's death. We returned to Hancock another way, taking the road that goes through Lake Linden and Dollar Bay and spent another night in the pleasant city of Hancock. The library was still open when we reached there and as it was just across the street from our Hotel I spent a few hours.

We reached Ontonagon about four o'clock on August 4 and it was so cold we were very glad to find a hot fire in the Hotel lobby. The town is "beautiful for situation," with respect to natural beauty. Located on the shore of Lake Superior with Porcupine Mountain to the west and broad woodland to the south and east broken here and there by thriving farms. The town has four mills and a Box Factory, and a \$50,000 High School.

We went from Ontonagon to Ironwood where we had our mail sent and had intended to Sunday but did not get so far. Ironwood is in every way a modern up-to-date and thriving mining town. It is the heart of the mining activities of the Gogebic Range. We spent the night and forenoon here and after dinner went to Bessemer, which is surrounded by beautiful hills that make one think of mountains. We spent the night at Marenisco where there are many Charcoal Camps, in the woods near by, and part of the town where the men from the camps have their homes is called Charcoal. The foreman of the Camps was at the Hotel, and told us the men in camp had a young deer that was so tame that it went wherever it heard the men at work and they had put a bell on it for fear he might be shot in the hunting season. They also had two black cub bears as pets.

We passed through Watersmeet where some of the graduates from Hillsdale College teach.

While staying over night in Iron River we met two young ladies from Toledo, Ohio, making the same trip that we were but in the opposite direction. We could both give helpful hints. On our way from Ironwood to Iron River we passed the "Lonesome Pine." The great pine was spared when building the road that links the two counties, Iron and Gogebic, and in

1922 the Lonesome Line was dedicated to the Upper Peninsula's fallen heroes of the World War.

We were in Crystal Falls over August 10, the day of President Harding's funeral, and spent the day at Fortune Lakes about five miles from Crystal Falls. Many summer cottages are around the lake and a good opportunity is given for fishing, camping and swimming. We ate our lunch in camp and saw many tourists. When we returned to the Hotel in Crystal Falls, in the evening, one of the guests who had just come in from Florence, Wisconsin, reported seeing several deer on his way.

The next day we went to Iron Mountain, which sprang into nation wide prominence in 1921 through the locating there of a huge sawmill and body plant by the Ford interests of Detroit. The village grew rapidly until today it has approximately 12,000 inhabitants. Other interests are mining and farming. We stopped in Caspian to look up the Presbyterian Community House and had quite a time between Old Caspian and New Caspian to locate the house; when we did find it "house cleaning" was in progress, and we could not see it in working order. We saw only the building, which is very nice inside and out. The wide fire-place and pretty library looked as if a home atmosphere might be felt by the fifteen nationalities that it reaches. We reached the little village of Hermansville late Saturday night so stayed over Sunday. The Hotel was large for the place and everything very comfortable.

Monday night we came to Menominee which finished my husband's business in the Upper Peninsula and we came home through some of the big cities of Wisconsin. Passing through Green Bay we saw a large field of Dill near a small place called Lena. We passed through one city after another all the way to Fond-du-Lac on Lake Winnebago. It kept us busy to keep "15W" in sight, through the cities. We spent the night in Theresa, then went to Milwaukee, where it was such a pleasure to view the city, in ease, for "15-W" was in plain sight in every block we were to go through. Thanks to whoever attends to such things. I wish all cities would do likewise. In Racine we

stopped in a park on the lake shore. The wind was very high and we watched Lake Michigan dashing over the breakwater by the park. From there we went to Waukegan and took what is called the Green Bay road to Chicago where we spent the night, starting the next day at 4:30 to avoid the traffic, which was enough even at that hour.

We had our breakfast at Whitney and lunch in camp near New Buffalo and were in Hillsdale for a late supper.

We had gone by our speedometer 2,189 miles since leaving home, and felt that a trip to the Upper Peninsula was well worth six weeks of anyone's time.

MRS. M. F. TURRELL,  
Hillsdale.

---

AT Mackinac is the loveliest tea-room this side of China (going either way around). Beneath the long gallery of the ancient officers' quarters of the fort (constructed by valiant Patrick Sinclair in 1780) for a few cents one may partake of waffles such as mother never made, sweetened with syrup which actually came from a maple tree, while before his view five million dollars' worth of scenery unrolls. Through the strait below Jean Nicolet plied his bark canoe 293 years ago, intent on finding in the Wisconsin forests the famed empire of Cathay. From St. Ignace, across the way, thirty years later, two young Frenchmen (Joliet and Marquette) set forth to find the "great river" of the West whose existence the Indians had reported, and which was thought to find its outlet in the "Vermilion" or California Sea. This last hope proved illusory, but the two adventurers found alike the Great River and a common immortality. Along the lovely waterway which leads from the Snow Islands, on a summer night of the year 1812 a grim flotilla, strangely compounded of savage and civilized elements, urged its way. Beaching canoe and bateau on the back side of the island (the spot is still called "British Landing") the white men dragged two or three small cannons up the forestclad height to the loftiest point of the island,

whence their iron messengers could be sent with unerring certainty into the American fort below, and over Mackinac Island the flag of Great Britain once more waved supreme. Beneath the fort, scarcely a stone's throw away, stands the old warehouse of the American Fur Company, built when Napoleon Bonaparte was struggling to dominate the civilized world. Within its walls, over a century ago, occurred the accident which afforded the garrison surgeon, Dr. Beaumont, his unique opportunity to achieve scientific immortality by giving mankind its first real knowledge of the human digestive processes, a knowledge which we have been told Sir William Osler was wont to rate in importance alongside the discovery of the circulation of the blood, as one of the two foremost medical achievements of modern times. It affords a significant illustration of human psychology that the caretaker of the building thoughtfully pointed out to us the room wherein the soldiery was quartered in the War of 1812 (the accuracy of this statement we are disposed to doubt) yet he had never heard of the shooting of St. Martin, or the epochal discovery which resulted therefrom.—Dr. M. M. Quaife, Editorial in *Mississippi Valley Historical Review*.

---

“**A**N Artilleryman of Old Fort Mackinac” is the title of the January number of the *Burton Historical Collection Leaflet*. It tells of the story of Sergeant James Keating, a native of the Emerald Isle, a brave and gallant soldier whose life was romantically connected with the Old Northwest.

---

Dear Editor,

**T**HANK you for sending the Magazine containing the article on the new Edward E. Hartwick Pines Park. It has been very gratifying to me to learn from letters and from the press that this gift of virgin forest, small though it be, is so greatly appreciated by the people not only in Michigan, but by those interested in conservation in far away states.

Thank you for giving space in your Magazine for a special mention of this park.

The Pines were never owned by Mr. R. Hanson singly however, as the article states. They were owned by Salling, Hanson Co. of which Mr. Hanson was one in a partnership of three men, E. N. Salling, R. Hanson and my father, Nels Michelson, who held this timber for thirty years or more, before I bought it for the park. I know they did not wish to lumber it, feeling the state should own it, and they offered it for sale at much less than the real value. I feel that the members of these families should have their share in making this gift possible recognized when the ownership of the Edward E. Hartwick Pines Park is mentioned.

Yours very truly,

KAREN B. HARTWICK.

---

**T**OURISTS visiting the neighborhood of Brighton in Livingston County are attracted by the old red brick building standing near, and wonder about its history. This building was originally built to house the "Bank of Kensington" about which Mrs. Louisa C. Butler of the Burton Historical Collection reports the following, taken from the *History of Oakland County* (edition 1877):

"The era of extravagant speculation in Michigan was inaugurated in 1835, and lasted until about 1840. During this period an inflated and frequently worthless currency was issued by 'wild-cat banks,' and was in general circulation. Of this class was the Kensington bank. The original organizers of this institution were Alfred A. Dwight and his sister, B. P. and Frederick Hutchinson, Enoch Jones, Sherman D. Dix, and a man by the name of Fisk (probably a near relative of the immortal James). These parties established themselves into a banking company, and according to the State law then in existence,—which was to the effect that twelve freeholders issuing a fund for one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars would be empowered to start a bank with a capital of

fifty thousand dollars,—went around and induced several of the moneyed men of the place to sign with them, and also to take stock in the concern. Those who signed (other than the originators above mentioned) were Neil F. Butterfield, Joel Redway, Chauncey L. Crouse, Joseph Wood, and Kinsley S. Bingham, afterwards governor of the State.

"The next step in this brilliant enterprise was to send a delegation to Detroit to borrow a certificate of deposit from the Farmers' and Mechanics' bank of that place, representing that the Kensington banking corporation of Kensington, Oakland County, Michigan, had deposited in that concern fifty thousand dollars. When the bank inspector came around the management produced this certificate, and were by him authorized to commence business. And they did it. They sent east and got a supply of bank-note paper, and went to work signing the notes with a charming alacrity. What nice crisp notes they were, too! The circulation didn't meet their expectation, so Messrs. Sherman D. Dix and Alfred A. Dwight took several thousand of them, without the knowledge or consent of the directors, and went on a tour of speculation. They landed in Milwaukee, and went to buying everything, from a farm or village lot to a pinchbeck time-piece or a suckling calf.

"During their absence the legislature passed an act making it incumbent on banking corporations to give real estate security. Presently the bank commissioner came to Kensington, and lo! of all the stockholders there were but two who owned real estate; those of the others who did had taken the precaution to transfer it. These two, Messrs. Crouse and Butterfield, began to feel queer. The commissioner insisted on their recalling their issue and winding up the concern. They put their heads together (of which two are said to be better than one, even if they be those of an innocent quadruped), and concluded to insert the following advertisement in the Detroit and Pontiac papers:

"Absconded with fifty thousand dollars of the notes of the Kensington bank, two persons of the following description (here follows a pen portrait). Two hundred dollars reward

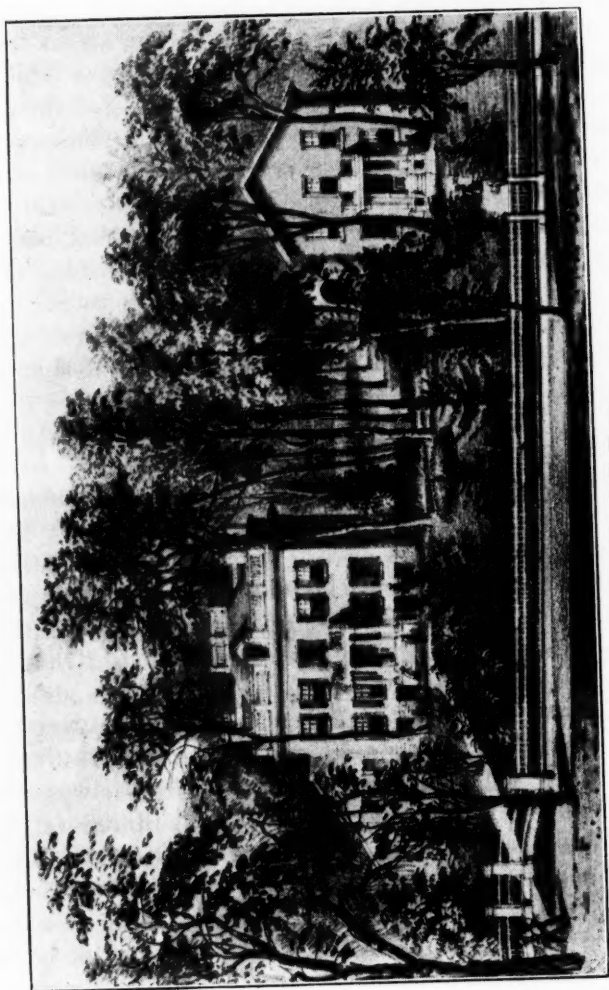
will be given for their return, or for such information as will lead to their arrest,' etc. Soon after, the worthies were arrested by the sheriff of Milwaukee and returned. The money was afterwards mostly recovered. In less than a year from its establishment in 1839 Kinsley S. Bingham was appointed receiver, and the Bank of Kensington soon followed the numerous other similar ventures of those days. In the interval, however, a red brick building was erected by Dwight, and was intended to be used as the bank. It has since done service as a house of worship for the Wesleyan Methodists, and who knows but that the subsequent sanctity of the place has obliterated its original iniquity?"

The Burton Collection has three notes of this bank, a \$1.00 and a \$5.00 issue of 1837 and a \$10.00 issue of 1838.

---

*Library*

THE city of Marshall is rich in historic incidents and buildings. One of the finest landmarks of early days is what was known for years as "the mansion house" (edifice to left in picture). This fine brick residence was built by Sidney Ketchum, the founder of the city of Marshall, in 1837-38, and was one of the first two brick dwellings erected at that time. (The other was built by Deacon Lord and still stands). The property passed out of Sidney Ketchum's hands in 1841 to the Farmers and Mechanics Bank of Michigan, in 1843 to the Farmer's Loan and Trust Company and in 1845 it was deeded to Filo Dibble. At this time the smaller building (right in picture) was erected on the adjoining lot by the Marshall Village Company and that structure, together with the mansion house constituted the plant of the Young Ladies Institute, Henry A. Pierce Principal. Here the young ladies of Marshall and vicinity were instructed, the larger house being used as living quarters for the boarding pupils, the smaller as the schoolhouse. The school flourished but a few years, and when discontinued, about 1859, the entire property came into the hands of Charles P. Dibble, son of Filo Dibble. He remodeled



The Marshall House

the house for his own use, removed the small school house and included that lot in his spacious grounds.

Charles P. Dibble was one of Marshall's early settlers having taken up residence here in 1836, and was one of its most successful merchants. Upon his demise the estate passed to his son William J. Dibble, for many years President of the Commercial Savings Bank and one of Marshall's most public spirited citizens. William J. Dibble died in 1923, and in 1926 his son Charles Dibble (an attorney in Kalamazoo, and his only heir) deeded the property to the City of Marshall as a hospital.

The house, standing amid its stately oaks, known today as "Oaklawn Hospital" is little changed in outward structure from the time of its erection in 1837, and is a fine, distinguished type of architecture, proudly regarded by the citizens of Marshall. The great oak in the street in front of the house (notice picture) was known as "bear oak" for the reason that from a platform erected amid its sheltering branches bears were shot when Marshall was but a village. The tree has been removed but a few years when it succumbed to age. The street passing in front of the property still bears the name "Mansion Street" taking its name from the mansion house.

MARY W. MILLER (Mrs. Craig C.)

Pioneer ancestor Chauncey M. Brewer  
who settled in Marshall in 1836.

---

**D**URING the past two months, work in preparing the Warren Building to receive the Chamberlain Memorial Museum at Three Oaks has proceeded apace. The top and the second floors are almost ready. Carpenters, electricians, and painters have been engaged in making necessary repairs and improvements, and the third floor, for long a storage room, has now assumed a most attractive appearance. The adding of additional lights, the rebuilding of the floor and the housing of the pillars, with the new light colors placed on the walls

and ceilings, will make this one of the most attractive of the several floors.

New cases to the number of seventy-three have been constructed and are now in place ready to receive the various exhibits. With the one hundred and twenty-four cases already owned and in use in the museum, the new quarters will have almost two hundred receptacles, where the articles on exhibition can be shown under glass.

In addition one hundred picture frames have been acquired which will add additional display space.

Some very attractive materials for museum use have been added lately. Miniature dresses made about doll size, yet perfect in every detail, of the period of the nineties and before will represent women's customs as to dress of the past generation. A selection from this wealth of material, numbering several hundred pieces, will be shown on the second floor.

During past years many inquiries for the famous Warren Calculating Engine have been made. This now has been examined and assembled by an expert, L. Leland Locke of Brooklyn, New York, and will be seen in the rooms devoted to Mr. E. K. Warren's personal exhibit.

Few appreciate the marvellous ability evidenced by Mr. Fred Warren in inventing and building the calculating device. It is not only an adding machine, but subtracts, multiplies and divides, and will perform simultaneously more than one of these operations. It will give the correct interest at any given percent for any number of years and days. It is also capable of computing the various powers of different numbers as given.

However, it is a very delicate and exact machine and to be operated requires the services of an expert. Mr. Locke says, "I can explain in detail how the various operations were mechanically accomplished. This is quite a task as the mechanism is exceedingly complicated. It is one of the most remarkable machines ever conceived up to the time it was built or considerably later."

Another fine exhibit is that of the collection of watches gathered by Major Paul Chamberlain. This contains some

very old time-keeping devices, but is mainly concerned with giving a complete representation of modern watches.

The museum is now gathering material for a toy and doll exhibit to show the child-life of the past. Already there are enough articles in hand to make a most interesting display but more things are needed, dolls in particular.

It is also hoped to have a case devoted to inventions by people of Three Oaks and surrounding regions. Several specimens have been received lately, among these a patented clasp, and wall brackets, through Mr. Earl Savage. Anyone knowing of such local inventions will confer a great favor by notifying the Director of the Foundation. Mr. Morley, now dead, made several inventions, and models of these should be on exhibition. —From *Foundation Facts*, edited by Geo. R. Fox, Sec'y. E. K. Warren Foundation, Three Oaks.

---

“**A**S I look back through more than eighty years” is the caption of a series of reminiscences of the forest and log cabin days of Michigan’s pioneer beginnings, now running in the Sunday edition of the Battle Creek *Enquirer and Evening News*. Mr. Charles W. Robinson, who tells these stories to the editor of the *News*, is a well known pioneer citizen of Battle Creek, and the only living charter member of Farragut Post, Grand Army of the Republic. He enlisted in the first company which left Battle Creek for the Civil War. Last December he celebrated his 88th birthday. Our cordial greetings to Mr. Robinson and our congratulations to the Editor of the *News* upon his enterprise in obtaining these memories of fast fading events.

## SILVER CREEK

BY IDA WESTERVELT SIBLEY

HALE, R. 2

What keeps your waters flashing,  
Silver Creek?  
Are you laughing, laughing, laughing,  
Silver Creek?  
Are you dreaming of the loggers,  
With their pike poles and their peavies,  
Of the jolly, roving loggers,  
And the boom logs heaving, heaving,  
Silver Creek?

How your waters glide and ripple,  
Silver Creek.  
Are you waiting, waiting, waiting,  
Silver Creek?  
Are you waiting for a maiden,  
For a maiden of the woodland,  
For a maiden and her lover,  
For the chieftain of his tribe,  
Silver Creek?

No more they'll give you greeting,  
Silver Creek.  
Their day is past and time is fleeting,  
Silver Creek.  
You have happy days yet coming,  
Days of fisher folks a-roaming,  
Roaming 'long your banks of willow,  
Where the speckled beauties hide,  
Silver Creek.

And the sunshine's always with you,  
Silver Creek.  
And the starshine and the moonlight,  
Silver Creek.  
And the twinkling little raindrops,  
Little raindrops with their kisses,  
Kisses on your shining wavelets,  
Dancing by your mossy shore,  
Silver Creek.

THE old people's organization, called The Three Quarter Century Club, although less than six years old, is already known throughout the United States and has even been heard of in foreign countries. This is the way it started: It occurred to Mr. Charles H. Wheelock, a leading citizen of Battle Creek, that it would be a good thing to get the old people of the town together and give them an opportunity to exchange reminiscences and renew old acquaintances. Such a meeting was held in the rooms of the Y. W. C. A. in the month of June, 1922, with the Hon. E. C. Nichols presiding. A few months later (November, 1922) the Sanitarium management gave a banquet to the Club at which there were gathered together several hundred of the old people of the town. With old-time songs, old-fashioned fiddlers and pioneer speeches, a program produced by the fertile brain of Mr. Wheelock, these fine old folks, quite a number of whom were in the nineties, for a few hours renewed their youth and really enjoyed the time of their lives.

From the beginning the Club has grown steadily until it now numbers more than 650 members. The secretary, Mr. Wheelock, has devoted much time to looking up the elderly people of the city, keeping a record of their birthdays and seeing that every one was remembered on his anniversary. He has made himself a friend and brother to every person in town who is past the three-quarter century mark.

An annual banquet has been held and the Club has performed such valuable service in brightening the lives of the elder members of the community, making them feel that they are not forgotten and in various ways contributing to their comfort and welfare, that it has fully established its claim to be a worth-while social activity. There ought to be such a Club in every city.

Dr. James Harvey Kellogg, president of the Club, in an address before the organization recently said something interesting about "cultivating youth." Said the Doctor:

"If you want to keep young, cultivate youth instead of old age. Live biologically and expect to profit by so doing. After three score years and ten never talk about old age, never think

about it. People who are continually talking about old age and who daily inspect themselves to find evidences of the encroachments of old Father Time, feeling around for old age symptoms, writing letters about growing old, and looking for old age indications in their associates, are adopting the best possible plan for growing old fast. I happened to be standing near when a lady asked the late Dr. Stephen Smith how it felt to be old. The witty Doctor, then in his ninety-fifth year, instantly retorted, "I cannot tell you, Madam, I have never felt that way yet."

---

IN 1924 steps were taken toward the compilation of an index of the material in all the leading newspapers of Michigan and Mr. J. S. Gray of Adrian took charge of it. Mrs. Stella M. Champney of the *Detroit News* staff was employed to do the indexing which as everyone can appreciate is a monumental job. The undertaking proved quite expensive as well as laborious and it failed to meet with anything like a paying patronage. This is no doubt due to an inheritance of the careless methods of the past when even newspaper publishers regarded their creations as entirely ephemeral and of little future interest, in spite of the fact that they were creating the only public record of passing events which would be available for future reference.

But appreciation of such records has suddenly begun to take hold among the librarians and teachers of history in all our educational institutions. This is apparent in the eagerness with which they clip newspapers and maintain card indexes of current events. Most of the literary and cultural clubs and societies have some sort of current events period in each of their meetings. These are surface indications from which one may forecast a more general interest in the newspaper files of the past 100 years as unofficial public records because they give us details and sidelights on public events and also historical and biographical data that can be found nowhere else.

To go through the files of any one newspaper covering a period of many years is an eye-straining and heartbreaking task. There is no profit in such work, yet, once well done it will be of incalculable and permanent value. By means of such indexes we may have more detailed and more dependable histories of the state of Michigan and of its particular localities than have ever been written or ever could be written otherwise. It would seem that we ought to have a systematic and co-ordinated movement which will combine together the influence of the librarians, the newspapers and the institutions of learning of the entire state in a petition to the state legislature for an annual appropriation with which this work can be undertaken and carried on under expert supervision.

Unrelated facts, considered separately, have but a moderate value because any single incident of human experience means little. But a proper assembling and correlation of long trains of facts of human experience can always make a powerful appeal to both reason and imagination. All that we know, all that we have and enjoy today of the blessings of civilization are the condensed and correlated essences of human history.

Newspapers are fragmentary journals of human events. Most news develops slowly and as each phase of a piece of news develops the enterprising news agencies gather it up and a multitude of newspapers scatter it abroad in the form of a printed record. Sometimes several months may elapse between the beginning and end of a particular story and newspaper space is too valuable to be wasted in constant reiterations of the completed story as far as it has progressed from time to time.

Current news can be easily carried in the minds of the reading public who are living in the period and the locality of the story's development but a few years later one must engage in more or less intensive research before he can assemble from the scattered relations of the record the entire story and thus see it in its true perspective. Right here we have the urgent call for a thorough indexing of the old newspaper files of the state

of Michigan by persons who are competent to assemble and correlate their contents.

The undertaking will be rather expensive because it involves an enormous amount of painstaking and intelligent work, but once well done and put in printed form we shall have the first fairly perfect assembling of a complete and exhaustive history of the state of Michigan which will be priceless in value and a guide for all future historians. Until it is done we shall not have a true perspective of the past or of its people for the picture of the past, in its fragmentary state, is generally patchy and, in some particulars, quite baffling in its obscurity.—*Extract from an address by Mr. George B. Catlin, librarian of the Detroit News, given at the Jackson meeting of the State Library Association.*

---

Dear Editor,

MANY thanks for January copy of the Magazine. I read with considerable interest Mr. John Fitzgibbon's article "Michigan in the Spanish-American War," but must correct his statement relative to the service of the 32nd Regt. Mich. V. Infy. of which I was a medical officer throughout the entire period of service of the Regt. in question.

We left Island Lake, Mich., May 19/98, arrived at Tampa, Florida, May 22/98, detrained, and proceeded to De Soto Park, beyond Ybor City and remained there until end of July when the Regiment was moved to Fernandina, Fla., remaining there until Sept. (I think). From there (Fernandina) we went to Huntsville, Alabama, and from there to Island Lake, Mich., for muster out. The 32nd Mich. never saw Georgia, except from the train, nor Pennsylvania, throughout the service. I cannot see how Mr. Fitzgibbon made the error, as he was familiar with the movements of our Regt. and one of our best friends. I have all the medical records of the 32nd Regt. (two large books) from day we left Island Lake, Mich., to time we were mustered out. I was the medical officer in charge of the Regt. Hospital throughout our service, and have dates of all

our movements. I will be glad to assist with my records any one who desires to compile an accurate history of Michigan's activities in the Spanish-American War. I am the only living Medical Officer of the Regt.

Very respectfully yours,  
JNO. L. BURKART,  
Capt. and Asst. Surg. 32nd Mich.

---

**D**EDICATED to Capt. Charles E. Belknap, Civil War veteran, statesman, author and well known resident of Grand Rapids, is a monument in the Chickamauga, Chattanooga and Missionary Ridge National Military park, in commemoration of a daring display of courage and heroism performed by Capt. Belknap, while but a lad of 17 years of age, who by force of circumstance, assumed control of more than 400 unionists and stemmed the oncoming tide of confederates at the battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 20, 1863.

This monument, erected in joint honor to Mr. Belknap, then second lieutenant, and A. E. Barr, also a second lieutenant, marks an important position held by the unionists in this battle, at which was stationed a detachment of the 21st Michigan Infantry at the Widow Glenn's farm home.

The monument is one of the most striking of several placed on this field to memorialize this historic and sanguinary battle of the Civil War. The monument is a rough, immense slab of Westerly granite, without other ornamentation than the seal of the state of Michigan and an inscription dedicated to Mr. Belknap and Mr. Barr. The slab is fan shaped and extends high into the air, its impressiveness augmented by the other markers on the battleground. The inscription reads:

Twenty-First Michigan Infantry Detachments.

Lieutenants C. E. Belknap and A. E. Barr, commanding. On the morning of Sept. 20, this detachment was the extreme right to Sheridan's division. Rallying from skirmish line about the Glenn house, separated from main command, and surrounded by the enemy, they held this position until relieved by Wilder's brigade.

The Widow Glenn's farm home, according to the story, was used as the strategic point of the battle and detachments sent out from this place were ordered, in case of necessity, to rally always at the farm. Although Barr had received no orders, Belknap, commanding a detachment of Company H, upon the extreme right, received orders from General Sheridan direct:

"Hold this line as long as you can, then fall back to the house and stay there."

Already the confederates were running toward a fence a few rods away. If once the unionists should break at this point it would give their opponents an opportunity to win an important position. Scarcely had the men assumed positions along the fence when the confederates were within a few yards. At the command of Belknap, the unionists began firing, stopping the mad rush. The detachment under the command of Belknap was ordered to withdraw to the Glenn farmhouse.

There they joined with 400 men from more than 21 different regiments which had been badly broken up through the onrush of the confederates. There were but two things to do, fight it out or surrender this important position. The latter, the youthful commander Belknap refused to do, taking his stand at a little knoll, upon which was placed a cannon. Clearing the fence and rushing across a hollow, the confederates were interrupted in their mad chase once more. Although but 17 years old the youthful Belknap gave orders to the men.

Gradually the battle increased in intensity so that the noise was that of a continual roar, so deafening that it became impossible to distinguish between artillery and musketry. Dense clouds of smoke enveloped the field, the very ground trembling beneath the shock of the battle constantly increasing in fury and volume. On came the confederates forcing their way through sheer numbers, the combat developing into a cruel hand to hand encounter, men dropping on both sides, some wounded and others killed outright. Then the opponents were forced back by the men under command of the young Belknap, whose coolness and matchless audacity and bravery inspired his comrades to fight with even greater fury.

The colors of the regiment, borne in brave hands, went down repeatedly, dead or wounded. They were always picked up. Here the brigade commander, Gen. Lytle, was killed, Col. McCreary, desperately wounded, and Lieut.-Col. Morris B. Wells, killed. Capt. Edgar Smith was mortally wounded and several other officers were shot. In all the fight was waged at a fearful cost of life.

With Second-Lieut. Barr aiding him, Belknap, with a revolver in one hand, continued his command, fighting and shooting at the same time. Gen. J. T. Wilder, commander of the brigade of mounted infantry, about one mile from the scene of firing came to the rescue of Belknap and his 400 men. With the increase in number the unionists forced the confederates back to their original position, and the important location of Widow Glenn's farmhouse was still in the grasp of the unionists.

Both Belknap and Barr were given lieutenant commissions following their bravery in the battle. Belknap participated in the battle of Missionary Ridge and was then sent with a detachment near the mouth of the Sequatchie River, where he was given a captain's commission at the age of 18 years, the youngest captain in the army. He had command of troops stretched out for 58 miles, the line extending from Chattanooga to Bridgeport.

---

#### THE INDIAN MOTHER'S LULLABY

(Translated from memory by C. E. Belknap, Grand Rapids)

    "Wash-tai,—O-Shela;  
    The red bird is sleepy,  
The flowers are slumbering down under the leaves.  
The stars and the moonlight are greeting the wigwam,  
    And the winds from the North Land  
    Have gone far away.  
    Wash-tai,—O-Shela.

"Wash-tai,—O-Shela,  
Rest warm in the fur robe that came from Ah-Mik,  
Whose blood stained the water, deep down in the hills.

"Wash-tai,—O-Shela;  
Thy brother is sleeping near you, is sleeping near you,  
Close by on the sand hills, where he fell in the fight.

"Wash-tai,—O-Shela;  
The sand hills are sleepy,  
Dream ye of the song birds that pass in the night,  
Dream ye of the mother who sleeps in the wigwam,  
Dream of thy mother  
And thy sleep will be quiet.  
Wash-tai,—O-Shela."

Note: Wash-tai, O-Shela, (Waste-oh shela) is an Ottawa term of endearment, signifying "good little pappoose."

---

FOR more than three hundred and fifty years, Indians and white men fought for the possession of North America. Not that pitched battle was waged incessantly, but two hostile races struggled relentlessly to the tragic end. The white man took the land, but the spiritual victory was won by the Indian. Singly, or with wife and children, the pioneers penetrated into the vast American forest. There generation after generation, the spell of untamed nature awakened dim, fleeting impressions of primeval human experience. The delicate tracery of leafy branches overhead, the illimitable woodland murmur, the ghostly shimmer of the moonlit glades, the sense of encompassing power to be mastered singlehanded might have made mystics of the whole westering race—as the wilderness did affect Lincoln. But the ever-present danger of sharp and sudden death from a hissing Indian arrow banished soulful meditation and turned the thoughts of men to physical self-preservation, to matter-of-fact reality. Like an undammed flood the overwhelming great white tide emerged from the forest and swept out over the prairies. Long before their last desperate resistance on the plains, the red men were doomed.

A Hindu would consider the defeat of the Indians inevitable, because they were the more spiritual people. And so they were. Cruel, treacherous, dirty—yes; but spiritual nevertheless. To them, as a people, the spirit was real. Sun, moon, stars, earth, sea, wind, cold, life, and death were all expressions of the omnipotent, universal Presence. Good and evil spirits were thought to dwell in rivers and hills, in beasts, birds, trees, and herbs. They deified both animate and inanimate objects, and for each curious phenomenon of nature they devised a fabulous explanation. Infinitely rich in symbolism and mystic conception, Indian mythology possessed contemporary meaning and application. The legends of the culture hero, incorporated in the ritual of tribal customs, were a part of their very life. Unlike imaginary Mount Olympus beyond the clouds, the spiritual resources of the Indians were visible. According to Neihardt,

They turned to One who, mightier than Man,  
Could help them most—the Spirit in the Sun;  
For whatsoever wonder-work is done  
Upon the needy earth, he does it all.  
For him the whole world sickens in the fall  
When streams cease singing and the skies go gray  
And trees and bushes weep their leaves away  
In hopeless hushes empty of the bird.

J. E. B.

From the *Palimpsest*, April, 1926.

---

IN the year 1875 Mr. F. J. Littlejohn, who describes himself as a geologist and surveyor, published at Allegan, Mich., a substantial volume entitled *Legends of Michigan and the Old Northwest*. It consists of a number of Indian stories gathered together by Littlejohn through his contacts with the Michigan Indians, some of which outdo Cooper for sheer thrills and human interest. The story goes that after the books were printed and ready for distribution the printing plant at Allegan burned and only two copies of the book were saved, and the volume was not again printed. However this may be,

the Marquette County Historical Society owns an original copy of this very interesting work, and while there are known to be more than two copies in existence, the book is undoubtedly rare. The Society's copy was once the property of H. F. Van Deusen of Kalamazoo whose date mark inscribed on the fly of the book is 1879.

There appears to have been no end to the volume on the Michigan Indians published by Henry R. Schoolcraft. The Marquette County Historical Society has just acquired *The Indian in His Wigwam*, published by Schoolcraft in 1848, which contains descriptions of the northern Michigan Indians, their manners and customs and their legends.

A pamphlet containing Chippewa legends has been published by Mr. Robert Wright of Munising and contains a number of interesting Indian stories centering about Munising Bay. The society has a copy of this also.

---

*See legend*  
**M**ARION ISLAND, owned by Henry Ford, a green gem in the ever changing setting of Grand Traverse Bay, is haunted, so the story goes. On moonlight nights a blacksmith working at his forge—mooing of cattle in the deep, virgin woods—these have been going on since long before there were any blacksmiths in the Grand Traverse region, and cattle had never been heard of by the Indian warrior who battled both blacksmith and cattle—then paddled away when his arrows glanced harmlessly off the brawny chest of the former, and the cattle kept on mooing.

All of this happened way back in the days before any white men had come to the Grand Traverse region. But the blacksmith is still there. So are the cattle. You can see the blacksmith working at his forge in the moonlight, hear the cattle lowing as they approach you out of the shadows—so the story goes.

Where they came from, why they are there is a mystery. They were first seen, the Indian legend says, by a warrior who

was paddling his canoe from the head waters of Lake Michigan to the site that is now Traverse City, bringing his furs from the Straits of Mackinac to settlements in Michigan south of the Grand Traverse region. He saw the beacon light of the forge as he approached the island. The silhouette of the blacksmith loomed against the flame-tinted smoke clouds. The sound of lowing cattle—

The warrior began an offensive. His aim was true, but ineffective. He had eight miles yet to go to the mainland. They say he established a speed record for canoes that has never since been equaled.

True or not, Marion Island has been shunned by Indians of every generation since the warrior first saw the blacksmith working at his forge in the moonlight and heard the lowing of cattle deep in the forest shadows.

---

STATE ARCHEOLOGICAL meeting, reported by Mr. Edw. J. Stevens of Kalamazoo: 425

The Michigan State Archeological Society held its winter meeting in Ann Arbor on Jan. 18, 1928. The attendance was good and the meeting, from a standpoint of the high quality of the papers read, was the best the society has held.

The following persons were elected to membership: E. C. Case, C. W. Angell, Francis M. Vreeland, B. D. Thuma, R. S. Woodruff, Charles F. Deiss, Jr., and J. C. Steere.

Before the general program, which was held in the beautiful and commodious new Museum Building, a short business meeting was held, and after a discussion of the advisability of incorporating, a committee was appointed by the president to draft the necessary legal paper for presentation at the next meeting of the society.

The benefits of legal incorporation are many. It places the society on a responsible business basis, enables it to hold property and makes its officers legally responsible to its Board of Directors. Also it makes the offer of the Director of the Uni-

versity Museum immediately available, that the Division of Archeology of the University of Michigan Museum act as custodian of the archives, specimens, collections and other properties of the Michigan State Archeological Society, if desired, and will preserve the same in proper files and forms, subject to the call and inspection of the society or its authenticated members. The society may consider the new museum its permanent headquarters, although it is understood that there is no desire on the part of the administration of the Museum to attempt to control or direct any of the society's offices, committees, etc., or, in the least, to influence or direct the functions of the society.

It was voted that the next meeting be a practical field meeting of several days duration, one day of which should be devoted to a program and the regular election of officers. It was suggested that it be held in Tuscola County where there are several mounds to be opened and studied.

While this kind of a meeting for this state is new, it has been pursued in other states quite successfully, especially in Illinois under the direction of Dr. Fay Cooper Cole of the University of Chicago. The date and location of this meeting is to be decided by the Executive Committee. It is thought that a meeting of this nature will be highly beneficial to those who have had no experience in the technic of uncovering archeological objects.

The influence of the society in putting the collection of implements, artifacts, etc., upon a scientific basis has been very successful, as was brought out at the meeting. Not only are the collectors of the state carefully indexing and describing their collections, but they are keeping field-notes of the general relations of the objects found to other material objects, which is highly necessary in order to arrive at the use and meaning of the object found.

A very interesting exhibit at this meeting was one of grooved axes, from all parts of the state, loaned by members of the society and others. This was very instructive as it gave one an insight into the great number of sizes, shapes, and materials in which these implements were made.

Another exhibit that attracted a great deal of interest was the reconstruction of an Indian grave found in a mound in Montmorency County. This was the work of C. W. Angell.

The first regular number on the program was a talk by Dr. Alexander G. Ruthven, Director of the Museum, on the construction and use of the new Museum Building of the University and its relation to classes in the University proper. This was followed by an inspection tour, under the direction of Dr. Ruthven, of the building itself. One of the features that is new in the museum is the wonderful lighting arrangement in the exhibition rooms and the ultra-modern conveniences in the laboratory and work rooms, with electricity, compressed air, water and gas available in each.

The paper on the "Earthwork enclosure of Michigan," by E. F. Greenman, was of the same high grade quality that he has always given us in the past. We understand that he is to be congratulated on recently receiving his degree from the University.

"The Big Mound at Springwells," by Harry L. Spooner, presented a striking contrast between the time of the Indians at the River Rouge and the time of Henry Ford. If big mounds have anything to do as a guide for the location of colossal industries, Grand Rapids ought next to be in order, as it has the finest group of mounds in the state, on the southwestern border of that city.

"Some ancient fire-beds of Saginaw County," by Fred Dustin, is a paper of scientific merit. By the data it contains archeologists may be able to assign at least an approximate to the occupation of that territory, as evidenced by the alluvial deposit superimposed on the fire-beds found and examined by Mr. Dustin.

"The Rise and Fall of the Fur Trade," by R. Clyde Ford, was an address characteristic of this man. He holds his auditors' interest for a half hour, but only those present can appreciate it, as it is like a radio program, you enjoy it but no record is available. We sincerely wish that Prof. Ford would not be so shy about committing his remarks to paper. His address

was of very great value to the history of our state and ought to be made available to others.

"Speculations of an Amateur Archeologist" was a paper given by Dana P. Smith. This gentleman has pursued the study of archeology for a great many years. His papers always bear the ear-marks of much research and careful preparation, and this one was no exception to the rule.

"The Classification and Description of the Common Rocks and Minerals which have been used in the Manufacture of Implements," by Wilbur L. Marshall, was a practical demonstration of the subject. He illustrated his remarks with many specimens of igneous rocks, feldspar crystals, syenite, granite, flint, chert, obsidian, etc., and the uses made of each class by the Indians. This paper was of special interest to all collectors, as it is very difficult at times to determine the material of which an artifact or implement is made.

"State Archeological Surveys" was the subject of Dr. Carl E. Guthe's paper. He elaborated upon the progress made in the various states in their efforts to record, collect and preserve the archeological features. He said that twenty-seven states are doing work along this line, a great many of them receiving financial assistance from their state legislatures. Several of the states are mapping the trails, earthworks, mounds, village sites, etc. In his remarks he touched on the work being done at the University of Michigan under the direction of Dr. W. B. Hinsdale. The archeological features of nearly one hundred and fifty townships having been mapped in the past year.

Before the meeting closed, and as a special order of business, Dr. A. V. Kidder, Andover, Mass., who is chairman of the Division of Anthropology and Psychology of the Natural Research Council, was elected an honorary member. This was done in recognition of his work in coordinating the efforts made by various organizations along the line of archeology and for his influence in making the University of Michigan the repository for a pottery sherd library.

The dinner given by the Ann Arbor members to the visiting members was attended by forty persons. The dinner speaker,

Prof. E. C. Case, Department of Paleontology, University of Michigan, gave a very enjoyable lecture on the "Geological History of Michigan in Relation to Indian Occupation."

He said in part that where the Indians of Michigan would make their trails and village sites, and where, later, the white settlers would find conditions suitable for agriculture, was determined to a large extent 70,000,000 or 80,000,000 years ago. Contrary to the general opinion of the public, Lakes Superior, Huron and Michigan were not gouged out by the advancing glaciers of a few thousand years ago, but were great river valleys which the lobes of the glaciers followed. In early times these valleys were eroded because there was soft rock where they are located, with hard rock where the upper and lower peninsulas now are. The position of the ice lobes determined most of the Indian trails of Michigan. The receding glaciers left festoons of hills along which the prehistoric tribesmen traveled. The Saginaw Valley and the region around Detroit south to Ohio are old lake beds. The movement of the waters leveled this section, and soil was deposited which made it suitable for agriculture, so both of these localities became thickly settled even in early Indian times, both because of the rich land for raising corn and because Indian trails could be made in any direction. At other places the fine sand left by the glaciers made it possible for Chicago promoters to plat land to sell to retired college professors for chicken farms.

## MISSISSIPPI VALLEY HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION

The twenty-first annual meeting of the Mississippi Valley Historical Association will be held in Des Moines, Iowa, April 26-28. Complete program will be mailed to all members early in April. The local committee is headed by Mr. Edgar R. Harlan of the State Historical Department of Iowa and Professor O. B. Clark of Drake University. Extensive plans have been made by the committee for the entertainment of all attending the meeting. A complimentary luncheon will be given Saturday by Drake University and tickets to the Drake relays.

Dr. John D. Hicks, chairman of the program committee, states that the program will deal very distinctly with Western history and the last frontier. One session will be devoted to state historical work to which several prominent State Historical Officials will contribute. Dr. Frederic L. Paxson of the University of Wisconsin will deal with the movement to "Americanize" the teaching of history at the history teachers' section on Friday afternoon.

## AMONG THE BOOKS

**S**OURCES OF THE CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES, CONSIDERED IN RELATION TO COLONIAL AND ENGLISH HISTORY. By C. Ellis Stevens. 2nd Edition Revised and Enlarged. Macmillan Co., N. Y., 1927. Price \$2.

The preface of the first edition of this work bears date January 1, 1894, and the preface of the second edition mentions that the call for it was made within a few weeks after the issuance of the first. It is dated Philadelphia, 1894. The 1927 publication is therefore a second edition, but it is an exact reprint of the edition of 1894. There are no additions to the text or notes, and no changes in the paging. Even appendix IV which purports to be the constitution of the United States, notwithstanding the re-publication of this work in 1927, stops with the fifteenth amendment, ratified in 1870.

While the book itself is a generally good piece of work, it has not been brought down to date. There is no reference to the great mass of material which has been made available since its publication in 1894. It is more nearly a reprint or reproduction or reissuance of the second edition published thirty-three years ago, and the text was so extensively reviewed when it was originally published that it is unnecessary to comment further upon it.—*William W. Potter, Michigan Supreme Court.*

---

**T**HE CAPTURE OF OLD VINCENNES. By Milo M. Quaife. Illustrated. Bobbs-Merrill, Indianapolis, 1927, pp. 231. Price \$2.75.

Specially timely is this volume by Dr. Quaife in view of the approaching 150th anniversary of the capture of Fort Sackville (now in the environs of the modern city of Vincennes) by George Rogers Clark in 1779. This event was of significance in that, without it, the territory now comprised in the states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin would probably have remained in the hands of the British at the Treaty of Paris and would now have been a part of Canada; in which case the Louisiana Purchase including the Mississippi Valley in 1803 would not have been likely, the territory to the west of it would quite possibly not have come within our reach, and the United States might today have been confined to the narrow strip of territory between the Appalachian Mountains and the Atlantic Ocean.

The volume is made up of the original narratives of Clark and of his principal opponent Governor Henry Hamilton, who at the period of the story had his headquarters at Detroit. Dr. Quaife has carefully edited these narratives, with an extended historical introduction and

ample footnotes. The need of the editing is explained in the introduction. Dr. Quaife says:

"The fact that most intelligent Americans are still strangers to Clark's narrative, is due in large part to circumstances for which he was in nowise responsible. Mainly, historical scholarship in America has been dominated until almost the present day by men of the Atlantic seaboard, and chiefly of New England. They have presented it, as might be expected, from the local point of view, and thus it has come to pass that school children of the Mississippi Valley have been made to learn the story of Boston street riots and seventeenth-century Indian wars in New England to the exclusion of a knowledge of their own local historical heritage of commonwealth and regional development.

"In part, however, certain qualities inherent in Clark's narrative are responsible for the obscurity which even yet envelops it. The young Virginian who plunged into the western wilderness while still but a youth, and who at twenty-five was toying with the destinies of a continent, necessarily knew little of schools or of formal literary discipline. Although his *Memoir*, as it came from his pen, has all the essential elements of literary greatness, it is cast in a mold which can scarcely fail to discourage the ordinary reader. Clark's spelling and syntax were as original as was his military genius; even the trained scholar finds difficulty at times in determining his meaning; and it is entirely safe to say that but few persons aside from professional scholars, have ever possessed the determination and interest to read the *Memoir* through. The pity of this is evident, for not often has so much of stirring adventure and dauntless endeavor been compressed within the limits of so few pages."

The editor's view of Hamilton will be appreciated by all who delight to see fairness in estimating the character and work of soldiers in the service of the opposing side:

"Of Clark's chief opponent in the Northwest, Governor Henry Hamilton of Detroit, it may be said without fear of successful contradiction that he was a brave and high-minded soldier. Although Clark entered upon his campaign animated by an intense feeling of prejudice and scorn for Hamilton, it is amply evident from his *Memoir* that throughout its progress he conceived for his opponent a steadily growing sense of respect and esteem. It was Hamilton's misfortune that, a man of but ordinary capacity, he should find himself pitted against a veritable military genius. It was his further misfortune to find it his duty to exemplify a system of warfare which had been universally practised by European nations—English, Spanish and French alike—for generations in America, but against which at length the better sense of humanity was beginning to revolt. In directing the red men

of the forest against the frontier settlements, Hamilton was doing no differently than Montcalm and Sir William Johnson and hundreds of others before him had done; moreover, he was but a minor official in British North America, under the constant supervision of his superiors, and however it may have seemed to the American settlers, against whom the Indian war parties were directed, it is wholly unfair for posterity to single him out for peculiar responsibility or infamy. Yet upon him Clark fixed the dreadful appellation, "The Hairbuyer," and by this he remains damned in American opinion even to the present moment. Whatever his faults or his virtues may have been, he is entitled, no less than his abler opponent, to a hearing at the bar of history. Fortunately for posterity, he penned his own narrative as soon after the event as the fortunes of war permitted, and this we present for the light it sheds upon that affair and upon the nature of Clark's achievement."

The life stories of these two men present, as the editor comments, a somewhat chastening reflection upon human ambitions and strivings. Clark failed to conquer Detroit through the failure of his countrymen to cooperate, and he was financially ruined through the failure of the Government to make good its obligations. Hamilton found his way to a Virginia jail, where for a long period he suffered the agonies of noisome confinement, from which he was released only through the powerful influence of Washington. These two documents, apart from their historical significance, are well worth reading for their purely human interest; the story they tell is as stirring as any work of fiction could well be.

---

**M**ICHIGAN'S THIRTY-SEVEN MILLION ACRES OF DIAMONDS. By Clyde L. Newnom. The Book of Michigan Co., Detroit, 1927, pp. 298. Price \$2.50.

The automobile has done much to move people from place to place and citizens have gained about their state some ideas at first hand. Road maps, tourist guides, newspaper stories, and advertising put out by chambers of commerce and development bureaus have furnished considerable data, and the schools have tried to use their material, along with articles in the magazines and cyclopedias, academic monographs, and reports from state departments. But these printed materials are scattered and fragmentary. With this need in the schools and with the tourist business now the second industry in the State, there has been obvious need for a "Book of Michigan," and for several years the Michigan Education Association has been working towards such a book. Meantime, comes *Michigan's Thirty-seven Million Acres*

*of Diamonds*. Here is a book that at once strikes the reader as filling one phase of the need at least. Its pictures, large type, frequent sub-headings and forceful style inspire us to read more on each topic and will serve at least as an attractive introduction to such heavier and more detailed materials as may be accessible.

This volume is written in two parts. The first contains a general summary of Michigan's assets in soil, timber, minerals and manufacturing, while the second is given to the State's recreational resources, with an appendix containing a mass of data that is indispensable to tourists. Its claims are very modest; it is a handy guide to the main features of current interest and value about Michigan. The following from the author's foreword presents it as written specially for tourists:

"On the map of North America," he says, "you will find the outstretched hand of Michigan offering a wholesome welcome to all. There is a strength in the grip of her hand that inspires confidence and gives one a feeling of security. . . ."

"Michigan has, since the beginning of time, possessed vast natural resources and distinctive beauty, but the confidence, the wealth and security we find behind her great industries, her happy, well-kept homes and her fine religious and educational institutions, have been created only through the energy and initiative, faith and civic loyalty of her pioneers of yesterday and of her citizens of today. . . ."

"The title of this book—'Michigan's 37,000,000 Acres of Diamonds'—is taken from the approximate number of acres the State contains. Michigan's hospitable people; her democratic and progressive religious and educational institutions; her great industries and undeveloped resources; her climate and natural attractions—hills and valleys, forests, lakes and streams, with their abundance of wild life, and all the other good things that are so essential to health, happiness and prosperity—are likened to jewels. The diversity of each of Michigan's charms suggests the scintillating diamond throwing forth innumerable rays of light and beauty from its many angles. . . ."

This is a good illustration of the author's style. Along with the facts, there is a sweep of the imagination which not only pictures the Michigan of today, but gives a hint of what it may one day be.

---

**M**ICHIGAN: A ROMANTIC STORY FOR YOUNG PEOPLE. By J. Walter McSpadden. Illustrated by Howard L. Hastings. J. H. Sears & Co., N. Y., 1927, pp. 126. Price 90 cents.

This booklet is addressed to people of all ages who are still young. It is one in the series "Romantic Stories of the States," and is not

so much a history as a series of historic incidents, chosen as sidelights which reveal the spirit of the times. It will come to adult readers with the memory-laden fragrance of their young days. The teacher and librarian will find it specially useful with children. It is written somewhat on the Rollo books model. While a big lake steamer is weaving its way from Chicago to Buffalo, a father tells his boy and girl stories of the past as these are suggested by questions that occur as the journey progresses. All in all, a tale of daring privation, high courage, and resourcefulness such as thrills the spirit of youth.

---

**A**NN ARBOR, THE FIRST HUNDRED YEARS. By O. W. Stephenson, Ph.D., Assistant Professor, University of Michigan. Published and distributed by the Ann Arbor Chamber of Commerce, 1927, pp. 492. Price \$5.

In this book Prof. Stephenson tells the story of Ann Arbor's founding in 1824 and its century of growth. At the outset he sketches the background of the westward movement of population which began in earnest with the close of the war of 1812 and to which the migration of the two Anns and their husbands to the site of "Ann's Arbor" was incidental. The special significance of the story is in its being typical of the pioneer emigrations and community development which took place throughout the middle west in the last century. Happily this story under a scholar's treatment escapes the errors and the dreary vista of the annalistic method characteristic of local "histories." Considerable attention is given to the University of Michigan. The genealogist will find the book of interest for the connections of old families who figured in the pioneer days of the University town. Incidents and anecdotes lend interest, many of them gathered from newspapers, letters and diaries. Apparently the author's study of first hand materials has been quite thorough. The volume is well printed and illustrated, bringing the story down to the centennial of 1924.

---

**A**CITIZEN'S HISTORY OF GRAND RAPIDS. Compiled and edited by William J. Etten. Published by A. P. Johnson Co., Grand Rapids, 1927, pp. 206. Price \$1.

This booklet was prepared in commemoration of the Seventy-first National Encampment of the Grand Army of the Republic held at Grand Rapids Sept. 11-17, 1927. Here in brief compass is a well told story of "how Grand Rapids grew from a wilderness and out of swamps into a modern, progressive, well-governed municipality." It deals

mainly with the beginnings of community life, and is not carried beyond the outbreak of the Civil War, except to trace the development of important governmental, educational and civic enterprises of today. The story is typical of communities which grew from pioneer settlements into modern cities. It is a story of hardy spirit, indomitable courage, and sublime faith. Such stories as these typify the spirit of America. The book is usefully and profusely illustrated.

---

**L**EGENDS OF THE CHIPPEWA. By Robert H. Wright, Wright Printing Co., Munising, Mich., 1927.

Believing that knowledge of the legendary lore of the once great Chippewa nation should be more widely disseminated, Mr. Wright, Publisher of Wright's Illustrated Weekly, has made up this little pamphlet of a score of pages recounting the mythical stories relating to the exploits of the Indian demi-gods about the region of Pictured Rocks and the south shore of Lake Superior. Very few of these Indians are now living but their traditions have been handed down by word of mouth from generation to generation. These stories are as entertaining as the tales of the Arabian Nights. We do not commonly think of the Indian as a story teller, or as indulging in fun and laughter. The white men who knew him in his original haunts were strangers to him and for them he was suspicious and diffident like the wild things of the forest. But a study of these legends and traditions reveals in him a deep vein of humor and shows him to have been far from a stoic. No mythology or cosmological traditions of any people furnish any more interesting accounts of the supernatural than do these stories of the powers and deeds of the demi-gods who presided over the aboriginal forest tribes of Michigan. This little collection should serve to stimulate further reading in the interesting literature pertaining to the Red men of our northern forests.



